



SCHOOL OF PUBLIC POLICY

CENTER FOR INTERNATIONAL &  
SECURITY STUDIES AT MARYLAND

---

# **OSCE Principles in Practice: Testing Their Effect on Security Through the Work of Max van der Stoel, First High Commissioner on National Minorities 1993–2001**

By M. Merrick Yamamoto

CISSM Working Paper

January 2015

Center for International and Security Studies at Maryland  
4113 Van Munching Hall, School of Public Policy  
University of Maryland  
College Park, MD 20742  
(301) 405-7601



**OSCE Principles in Practice:  
Testing Their Effect on Security  
Through the Work of Max van der Stoel,  
First High Commissioner on National  
Minorities 1993–2001**

**Three Cases in Conflict Prevention:  
Ukraine, Estonia, and  
Macedonia**

**By M. Merrick Yamamoto**



# Contents

## **PREFACE AND ACKNOWLEDGMENTS**

<b>CHAPTER 1. INTRODUCTION AND METHODOLOGY .....</b>	<b>1</b>
STATEMENT OF THE PROBLEM.....	1
METHODOLOGY .....	3
SIGNIFICANCE OF THE STUDY .....	7
<b>CHAPTER 2. BACKGROUND OF THE OSCE AND THE HCNM .....</b>	<b>8</b>
INTRODUCTION .....	8
THE OSCE AND THE COLD WAR.....	8
THE OSCE 1990–1992.....	19
THE HCNM 1993–2001.....	23
<b>CHAPTER 3. THE OSCE SECURITY PRINCIPLES .....</b>	<b>27</b>
INTRODUCTION .....	27
THE OSCE SECURITY PRINCIPLES 1993–2001 .....	27
<b>CHAPTER 4. CASE STUDY 1: OSCE PRINCIPLES AND UKRAINE .....</b>	<b>46</b>
BACKGROUND OF UKRAINE AND THE CRIMEAN PENINSULA .....	46
THE HCNM’S INTERVENTION AND RECOMMENDATIONS .....	48
OSCE PRINCIPLES, IMPLEMENTATION, AND EFFECT ON SECURITY.....	53
<b>CHAPTER 5. CASE STUDY 2: OSCE PRINCIPLES AND ESTONIA .....</b>	<b>56</b>
BACKGROUND OF ESTONIA .....	56
THE HCNM INTERVENTION AND RECOMMENDATIONS .....	59
OSCE PRINCIPLES, IMPLEMENTATION, AND EFFECT ON SECURITY.....	67
<b>CHAPTER 6. CASE STUDY 3: OSCE PRINCIPLES AND MACEDONIA .....</b>	<b>71</b>
BACKGROUND OF MACEDONIA .....	71
THE HCNM’S INTERVENTION AND RECOMMENDATIONS .....	73
OSCE PRINCIPLES, IMPLEMENTATION, AND EFFECT ON SECURITY.....	83
<b>CHAPTER 7. FINDINGS AND CONCLUSIONS.....</b>	<b>86</b>
INTRODUCTION .....	86
FINDINGS AND CONCLUSIONS .....	86
<b>APPENDIXES .....</b>	<b>94</b>
APPENDIX A: THE OSCE SECURITY CONCEPT, 2001 .....	94
APPENDIX B. TABLE OF DOCUMENTS ANALYZED FOR OSCE SECURITY PRINCIPLES.....	102
APPENDIX C. ANALYSIS OF LEVEL-IV STATES BY GEOGRAPHIC REGION .....	103
APPENDIX D. DATA COLLECTION AND ANALYSIS FORM.....	105
APPENDIX E. HCNM RECOMMENDATIONS TO UKRAINE REGARDING CRIMEA .....	106
APPENDIX F. HCNM RECOMMENDATIONS TO ESTONIA .....	109
APPENDIX G. HCNM RECOMMENDATIONS TO MACEDONIA .....	114
<b>SELECTED BIBLIOGRAPHY .....</b>	<b>120</b>
<b>INDEX.....</b>	<b>130</b>



## Preface and Acknowledgments

This monograph tests the OSCE approach to security. The OSCE approach to security encompasses all areas that can cause tensions and conflict between States, and is the result of a sustained effort by almost all of the world's democracies on how to achieve both security and individual freedom. An important basis of the OSCE security concept is that international security cannot be achieved without the protection and promotion of individual rights and freedoms.

The study first extracts from official OSCE documents a set of principles designed to achieve international security, and then uses the work of the first OSCE High Commissioner on National Minorities (HCNM), Max van der Stoep, to test the effectiveness of the principles in practice. From 1993 to 2001, HCNM Max van der Stoep applied OSCE principles in cases involving minority tensions with a high potential for international conflict, and this experience provided the means to assess the practical effects on security when OSCE principles are implemented.

The study examined three cases that involved potential conflict: Ukraine and separatism in Crimea; Estonia and tensions regarding the Russian minority; and Macedonia and tensions regarding the Albanian minority. The study found that in each of the three cases, the implementation of OSCE principles reduced national and international tensions involving minority issues, and increased security. The increase in security was seen within each State, between States, and in the region, and reduced the potential for conflict within and between OSCE States. The results were particularly significant in view of the instability, conflicts, and tensions of the post-Cold War period; the OSCE's ongoing institutionalization during the period; and the limited resources and tools available to the OSCE and the HCNM.

The study identified and articulated twenty OSCE security principles that addressed national and international security. The principles addressed the rights and responsibilities of State sovereignty; a comprehensive, cooperative, and common security approach; the prevention of security threats and the peaceful resolution of issues; the protection and promotion of individual rights and freedoms through democracy, the rule of law, and the market economy; rights and responsibilities pertaining to national minorities; the development and advancement of shared values; and processes and mechanisms. The monograph extended the research on the OSCE principles to express as OSCE security concept. The OSCE security concept is a security framework based on the idea that security depends on the development and implementation of principles guiding three areas: how States deal with each other and resolve problems; the protection and promotion of individual rights within States; and the processes and mechanisms to review and advance values, principles, and commitments.

The study showed that the implementation of OSCE principles in Ukraine, Estonia, and Macedonia significantly increased security in those three countries and the OSCE region. The study found that the OSCE principles and the OSCE security concept constitute a significant body of thought and practice regarding security, and respect for the individual. The OSCE principles, the OSCE security concept, and the work of the High Commissioner on National Minorities merit further examination, development, and application to national security policy and practice. The application to national security policy and practice is relevant to all security threats and problems.

\*\*\*

The author thanks Dr. John Steinbruner, Admiral Stansfield Turner, Dr. Mac Destler, Dr. Marcus Franda, Dr. David Crocker, Dr. Nancy Gallagher, Dr. Mark Lopez, Susan Borcharding, Dr. Andrea Williams, and Kenneth Williams for their contributions in the preparation of this monograph. Special thanks to Dr. Margaret Scheffelin for her invaluable help in every aspect of the study and the OSCE principles, Edward J. Scheffelin and the Visual Tutor Company for generous support, and Clifford Yamamoto most of all for support in every area.





# Chapter 1. Introduction and Methodology

## Statement of the Problem

**The Security Problem and the OSCE.**<sup>1</sup> The problem of achieving national and international security has been a compelling concern of governments for a very long time, and many approaches and theories have been tried. One new approach began in 1975 when the Heads of State or Governments of thirty-five North American and European States signed the Helsinki Final Act and thereby established the OSCE.

The Act contained a number of commitments to which all of the OSCE participating States had agreed; however, two aspects were particularly significant. First, by signing the Act, the States committed themselves to follow the Helsinki Decalogue, a set of ten principles intended to guide governments in their relations with each other and with their own populations. Second, the States agreed to the “Helsinki process,” a process in which they would meet periodically to evaluate their implementation of these principles and other commitments, and to negotiate new ones, which would then be expressed in OSCE documents adopted by consensus.

From 1975 to 1988, the participating States implemented the Helsinki Decalogue principles to varying degrees—the then-communist States consistently violated the human rights provisions, and no State implemented all of the principles perfectly. During this period, the States made slow progress in developing new commitments, for the States were hampered by the deep political divide that existed between the Soviet and Western blocs in Europe. However, during the 1989–1991 period at the end of the Cold War, the States were able to reach unprecedented agreements regarding core values pertaining to human rights, democracy, the rule of law, and the market economy. The States’ commitments in these and other areas were reflected in key OSCE documents during this period of great change (often called the “*Wende*”), in particular the 1990 Copenhagen Document, the 1990 Charter of Paris, and the 1991 Moscow Document.

A review of these documents revealed that a number of the new commitments also appeared to be new OSCE security principles, but were not reflected as such. In 1990, for example, the States agreed that democracy would be their only form of government, an agreement that had significant security implications but was not incorporated into the Helsinki Decalogue. Also in 1990, the States began to establish organizational structures in the OSCE to help put the new commitments into practice. As examples, in 1990 the States established the Office for Free Elections to help the new democracies develop election processes, in 1992 established the office of the OSCE High Commissioner on National Minorities (HCNM) to prevent tensions involving minority issues from escalating into conflict, and in 1995 changed the OSCE from a conference to an organization.<sup>2</sup> The States used these structures to assist in implementing the new commitments; however, a review of the security literature did not reveal any studies on the effect on security when OSCE principles are implemented.

This study contributes to remedying the lack of knowledge in two areas. The study first identified, synthesized, and articulated the security principles contained in primary OSCE

---

<sup>1</sup> Organization for Security and Cooperation in Europe (OSCE). Prior to Jan. 1, 1995, the OSCE was called the Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe (CSCE). For readability this study may use “OSCE” to include the CSCE.

<sup>2</sup> The Office for Free Elections became the Office for Democratic Institutions and Human Rights (ODIHR) to reflect the expansion of its mandate to include human rights, democracy, and the rule of law.

documents from 1975 through 1992 (Chapter 3), and then uses the work of the first HCNM to assess the effect on security when these principles were implemented, as shown in three case studies (Chapters 4, 5, and 6).

**The HCNM and Assessing the Effectiveness of OSCE Security Principles.**<sup>3</sup> The High Commissioner on National Minorities was a conflict prevention instrument, appointed by the OSCE States to prevent interethnic tensions from developing into security threats that would endanger the peace, stability, or relations between OSCE States. The incumbent's mandate was to monitor the entire OSCE region for signs of tensions involving minorities that in his judgment might lead to tensions between OSCE States, and then work in proactive ways to reduce or resolve these tensions before they escalated into crises or conflict. The region for which the first HCNM was responsible consisted of over fifty participating States in Europe, Central Asia, and North America.

The OSCE States created the position of the HCNM in July 1992 in response to conflicts that had broken out in Azerbaijan, Georgia, Moldova, Yugoslavia, and elsewhere as the Soviet Union dissolved. These conflicts all had an interethnic dimension and were very difficult to end, and the States believed it was essential to prevent minority tensions in other situations from erupting. The States, therefore, decided to appoint an independent and impartial individual of high stature who could look into minority-related problems confidentially, and work quietly to address problems before they became crises.

The OSCE States appointed an experienced statesman, Max van der Stoep, as the first HCNM on December 15, 1992. He held the position from January 1993 to June 2001, and his work consisted of essentially four parts. First was the continuous monitoring of all OSCE States for tensions involving minority issues; second was crisis intervention if these tensions threatened to erupt into violence; third was to issue an early warning to the OSCE leadership if he believed he could not contain a situation with the tools available to him; and fourth was to work with governments to resolve minority issues that were causing tensions between OSCE States, or might cause a serious crisis within an OSCE State.

The work of the HCNM provided a means to assess the effect on security when OSCE principles were implemented. The HCNM used a number of methods in his work, one of which was to issue formal recommendations to governments regarding minority situations in their countries, usually in the form of a letter to the foreign minister of the State concerned. OSCE principles provided a basis for these recommendations, and therefore, by identifying the principles contained or implied in them, the extent to which they were implemented, and any observed effects on security, the following research questions could be addressed:<sup>4</sup>

What OSCE security principles were in effect during the first High Commissioner on National Minorities' 1993–2001 tenure?

Did the implementation of the OSCE security principles contained in the first HCNM's recommendations have any significant effect on security?

---

<sup>3</sup> For readability, abbreviations and terms such as "HCNM" and "High Commissioner" may be used interchangeably throughout the text.

<sup>4</sup> The HCNM also relied on other international standards, in particular the Council of Europe conventions (especially the Framework Convention for the Protection of National Minorities), and other standards such as UN conventions.

## Methodology

**Phases of the Study.** The study was conducted in three phases: identification of the OSCE security principles, case criteria and selection, and data collection and analysis.

**Phase I: Identification of the OSCE security principles.** In Phase I the OSCE security principles were identified, articulated, and documented. This step was necessary because the principles were not stated explicitly in any one document, but were contained in a series of documents that the States negotiated and adopted through the Helsinki process.

OSCE documents from 1975 to 1992 were selected as the potential data sources for the principles, and the documents selected for analysis were the six “summit documents” adopted or signed at meetings of Heads of State or Government, the three documents adopted at the end of the three “follow-up conferences” held during the 1977–1989 period, and the two documents adopted from the three-meeting Conference on the Human Dimension of the CSCE held during the 1989–1991 period (see Appendix B for the list of documents analyzed). The summit and follow-up documents were analyzed because they were adopted or signed at the highest political level, that of Heads of State or Government. The two documents adopted from the Conference on the Human Dimension (the 1990 Copenhagen Document and the 1991 Moscow Document), were analyzed because they expressed new and significant agreements regarding individual civil and political rights, democracy, the rule of law, and the market economy, and because the HCNM drew extensively from them in his recommendations.

Content analysis was used to determine the principles that were in effect when the HCNM began his work on January 1, 1993, and subsequent documents were analyzed until June 2001 to identify any changes to the principles that might have occurred during his tenure (no changes were identified).

**Phase II: Case criteria and selection.** The primary criteria used in case selection were the seriousness of the threat to security caused by tensions involving minority issues, and data availability and verifiability. Other considerations included the scope of issues involved, geographic location, and types of threats. To evaluate data availability and verifiability, the levels of HCNM involvement with all OSCE States were analyzed and organized into four categories as shown below.

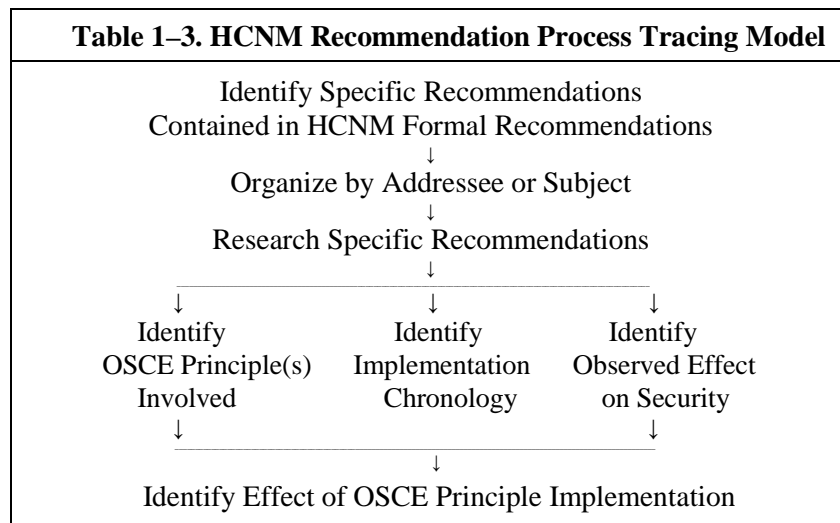
<b>Levels</b>	<b>OSCE States</b>
I. The HCNM monitored for signs of minority tensions that could pose international security threats.	55 countries (all OSCE States)
II. The HCNM discussed issues with a government and/or visited a country, but did not issue any formal recommendations.	6 countries: Georgia, Greece, Tajikistan, Turkey, Uzbekistan, and Yugoslavia
III. The HCNM issued one formal recommendation then ceased direct involvement.	2 countries: Lithuania and Russia
IV. The HCNM issued formal recommendations, and his involvement was sustained.	12 countries: Albania, Croatia, Estonia, Hungary, Kazakhstan, Kyrgyzstan, Latvia, Macedonia, Moldova, Romania, Slovakia, and Ukraine

The group of countries in Level IV was identified as the dataset from which the case studies would be selected (see Appendix C for an analysis of the Level-IV States). This group contained the countries for which data were most available and verifiable in terms of formal recommendations. To evaluate the seriousness of the threats to security from tensions involving minorities, each Level-IV country was analyzed as shown below.

<b>Threats</b>	<b>Occurrences in Level-IV States</b>
1. Interstate war or armed intervention between OSCE States	None
2. Armed conflict within OSCE States	Macedonia 2001
3. Crises resulting in HCNM intervention	Estonia 1993; Ukraine 1995; Macedonia 1995, 1997
4. Ethnic clashes	Macedonia 1995, 1997

Estonia, Macedonia, and Ukraine were the three countries from which case studies would be selected. In all three cases sufficient data were available in terms of formal recommendations. Macedonia experienced intrastate conflict and clashes involving minority issues, and situations occurred in Estonia, Macedonia, and Ukraine that resulted in HCNM crisis intervention. In Estonia the HCNM was primarily involved in interethnic relations between Estonians and Russians; in Macedonia with interethnic relations between Macedonians and Albanians. The HCNM’s work in Ukraine involved three primary issues: Crimean autonomy and separatism, the Tatars and other formerly deported peoples in Crimea, and language and culture regarding ethnic Russians. Of the three situations, Crimea was selected as the issue that prompted HCNM crisis intervention, and as an issue that involved a potential conflict between Russia and Ukraine, both of which possessed nuclear weapons at the time.

**Phase III: Data collection and analysis.** The HCNM’s formal recommendations were obtained from the OSCE website, and numbered chronologically. Each formal recommendation contained specific recommendations, and content analysis was used to identify and number these. A process tracing model (Table 1–3) was developed to track the implementation of the recommendations, the OSCE principles involved, and observed effects on security.



## Chapter 1: Introduction and Methodology

A data collection instrument was developed on which to record the findings for each specific recommendation. This instrument was a form containing the following elements: Subject, HCNM specific recommendation(s), OSCE security principle(s) involved, Implementation chronology, Observed effect(s) on security, and Notes (see Appendix D).

Each specific recommendation was analyzed to identify the OSCE security principle or principles involved, and relevant material was researched to identify the implementation chronology by year for each specific recommendation, any observed effects on security, and any applicable notes. Codes were developed to indicate the degree to which each specific recommendation was implemented, and for any observed effect on security, as shown below.

<b>Table 1–4. Implementation Status</b>	
<b>Degree of Implementation</b>	<b>Code</b>
The specific recommendation was implemented in total.	Yes
Some part of the specific recommendation was implemented, but was not implemented in its entirety.	In part
No part of the specific recommendation was implemented.	No
No implementation data were identified.	Not observed

<b>Table 1–5. Effects on Security</b>	
<b>Observed Effect on Security</b>	<b>Code</b>
An effect on security was observed from implementation or non-implementation of a specific recommendation.	Yes
No effect on security was observed.	Not observed

A number of sources were used to collect data on implementation and observed effects. Publications produced by international organizations included documents from the OSCE, European Union (EU), Council of Europe, and United Nations (UN). Media sources included the BBC Summary of Broadcasts as found on the Minorities at Risk (MARS) project, newspaper accounts from the Lexis Nexis database, and Keesing’s Record of World Events. Government sources included statistical reports, survey results, and statements by government officials. Academic journals and published case studies were used. Content analysis was used to analyze material regarding the countries concerned, articles, and speeches by HCNM Max van der Stoel, and articles and books written about his work as HCNM.

The findings on each specific recommendation were recorded on the data collection instrument. These findings were then analyzed for any observed effects on national and international security as a result of the implementation or non-implementation of the HCNM’s recommendations, and the OSCE principles contained therein.

The primary types of observed effects on security sought were those directly attributable to the implementation or non-implementation of the HCNM recommendations regarding specific issues. In particular, evidence was sought regarding reduced or increased tensions pertaining to a specific issue referenced in the HCNM's recommendations.

**Definitions.** For the purpose of this study, the following definitions were used:

- An “effect” is an observable change.
- A “formal recommendation” is an official letter that the HCNM issued to a government, or an official HCNM press release/statement that contains recommendations.
- An “HCNM intervention case” is an instance in which the HCNM issued a formal recommendation to the government of an OSCE State.
- The “human dimension” is a category consisting of those commitments made by the OSCE participating States to ensure full respect for individual rights and fundamental freedoms; abide by the rule of law; promote the principles of democracy; and build, strengthen, and protect democratic institutions.
- “Human rights” and “individual rights” are, in general, political and civil rights, and the rights that protect the security of the person.<sup>5</sup>
- “Implement” is “to put into practice.”
- “International security” is the protection of a State, including its population, from major external threats to its territorial, political, or economic well-being.
- A “kinstate” is a country in which the majority of the population belongs to a group that is a minority in a neighboring country.
- A “minority” is a collection of individuals who share linguistic, ethnic, or cultural characteristics that distinguish them from the majority.<sup>6</sup>
- “National security” is the protection of a State, including its population, from major threats to its territorial, political, or economic well-being.
- “OSCE principles” and “OSCE security principles” are those principles agreed to by the OSCE participating States and expressed in OSCE documents, whether or not specifically identified as a principle.
- “Security” is the state of feeling or being free from fear, danger, anxiety; a sense of safety.
- A “specific recommendation” is a recommendation contained within a formal recommendation.

**Limitations of the Study.** Data for some HCNM intervention cases were more available than for others; for example, more data were available from the Estonian government than from the Ukrainian or Macedonian governments. The accuracy and availability of population and economic statistics were limited because of the unsettled conditions during the period being studied, which often prevented accurate statistics from being collected. The identification of the

---

<sup>5</sup> The terms “individual rights” and “human rights” are generally used interchangeably in this study.

<sup>6</sup> Van der Stoel, address, “The Relevance of International Standards for the Protection of Minorities,” Sept. 20, 2000. Van der Stoel also stated that these individuals, acting alone or together, usually seek to maintain their identity *and* give a stronger expression to those ethno-cultural and linguistic characteristics that give them a sense of individual and collective identity.

OSCE principles was limited to primary OSCE documents from 1975 to 2001, and therefore did not account for any possible changes after that period. Time was a constraint, in that it was not feasible to conduct more than three case studies, or to visit the individual countries.

### **Significance of the Study**

This study has significance in several areas. The articulation of the OSCE principles contributes to the security and international relations fields. These principles may have particular value because they are based on the practical experience of most of the world's democracies, almost all of which were OSCE States. In addition, the OSCE documents as a whole comprise a significant repository of the thoughts and practices of these States on achieving security and respect for individual rights. The principles are also significant because they have advanced international security: the ideas embodied in the 1975 Helsinki Final Act stimulated the formation of many nongovernmental organizations (NGOs) and human rights groups that helped to overthrow totalitarian governments in Eastern and Central Europe during the 1989–1991 period, and establish liberal democratic governments. Of particular significance is that these groups followed OSCE principles while pressing their governments to implement and abide by the principles, and therefore, in most cases used nonviolent methods in their efforts to achieve change.

The study findings add to the policy debate regarding the means to achieve international security, and have practical significance for future studies on the OSCE and other security organizations. The research goes beyond the current international security literature: while there have been extensive studies on international relations theories, few studies have been done on the effectiveness of security principles.

The study adds to policy research methods. The process tracing model, data collection instrument, and data analysis methods developed are methodological adaptations that provide an advance in empirical methodology.

\*\*\*

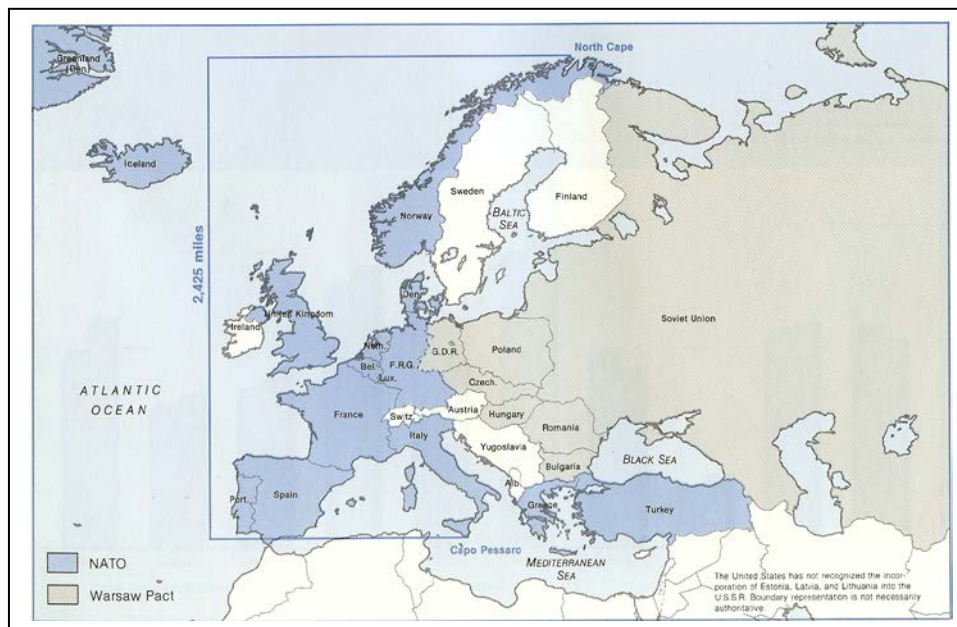
## Chapter 2. Background of the OSCE and the HCNM

### Introduction

This chapter traces the emergence of the Organization for Security and Cooperation in Europe (OSCE) as an organization with political and moral authority, and the creation of the position of the OSCE High Commissioner on National Minorities (HCNM) in response to the reemergence of ethnic tensions as a source of conflict in Europe. The chapter then addresses the position of the HCNM, including the selection of the first incumbent, the tools available to him in fulfilling his responsibilities as HCNM, his working methods, and his accomplishments.

### The OSCE and the Cold War

**Europe after World War II.** After World War II, Europe was essentially divided into three groups of States: the Western bloc, Soviet bloc, and the neutral or nonaligned States. Most of the Western bloc States had liberal democratic governments and were members of the North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO); most of the Soviet bloc of Eastern European States had communist governments and were members of the Warsaw Pact (the Warsaw Treaty Organization (WTO)); and most of the neutral or nonaligned States had liberal democratic governments, but did not belong to either military alliance. From the late 1940s to 1990, the East and West blocs confronted each other in a “Cold War” as shown below.<sup>1</sup>



Large numbers of military forces were stationed in both East and West—U.S. forces alone in the mid-1980s included four Army divisions. The borders between East and West (the “Iron Curtain”) were heavily fortified and guarded, and the Berlin Wall separating East and West Berlin came to symbolize the division of Europe.

<sup>1</sup> U.S. State Department, *Atlas of NATO*, 1985, 3. (The white areas in Europe are the neutral or nonaligned States.)



During the 1950s and 1960s, communication between the two blocs was limited, and tensions were often very high: the 1962 Cuban missile crisis brought the world to the brink of nuclear war between the United States and the Soviet Union. Though the two countries avoided this catastrophe, the potential consequences were too devastating to risk another crisis, and the idea of *détente*—the relaxation of tensions between East and West—gained ground.

**The Negotiation and Adoption of the Helsinki Final Act.** During the 1950s and 1960s, the Soviet Union proposed a pan-European security conference several times, and *détente* in the late 1960s led to an agreement to hold such a conference. Preparatory talks were held at the foreign minister level in Helsinki from November 1972 to June 1973, during which the participants worked out the agenda, rules of procedure, organizational structure, and arrangements for a three-stage Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe.<sup>2</sup> The three stages would be a meeting of foreign ministers, a second stage for the actual drafting of the final document, and a concluding stage to adopt the document.

The agreements from the preparatory talks were published as the Final Recommendations of the Helsinki Consultations. These Recommendations outlined the framework for the Conference, and the agenda—the four “baskets”—to be negotiated:<sup>3</sup>

- I. Questions relating to security in Europe:
  - Principles of international relations between participating States, and
  - Confidence-building measures;
- II. Cooperation in the fields of economics, science and technology, and the environment;
- III. Cooperation in humanitarian and other fields; and
- IV. Follow-up to the conference.

The objective was to promote better relations among the participating States, and to provide the conditions in which their people could live in peace free from any threat to their security. The work would proceed from the premise that the strengthening of security in Europe was not directed against any State, and should contribute to world peace and security.<sup>4</sup>

**Stage I.** Stage I of the Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe took place in July 1973 in Helsinki, and was a meeting of the foreign ministers of the participating States. The ministers first adopted the Final Recommendations of the Helsinki Consultations, and then, in accordance with Final Recommendations, each minister stated his government’s views on problems relating to European security and cooperation.<sup>5</sup>



Wreath marking location of individual who had been shot at the Berlin Wall while trying to escape to the West (author’s photo, 1980).

<sup>2</sup> The issues discussed ranged from minor details to fundamental questions, such as the titles of the principles whose texts were to be negotiated.

<sup>3</sup> “Basket” in the OSCE sense meant “a group of related subjects.” The States adopted the term in order to group diverse subjects together under broad headings without prejudicing the importance of any single subject. See Maresca, *To Helsinki*, 16. The OSCE later used the term “dimension.”

<sup>4</sup> Final Recommendations of the Helsinki Consultations, 1973, para 14.

<sup>5</sup> See the verbatim records, *Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe: Stage I-Helsinki*, 1973.

## Chapter 2. Background of the OSCE and the HCNM

**Stage II.** Stage II took place in Geneva from September 1973 to July 1975, and was the actual negotiation of the Helsinki Final Act. Experts and delegates appointed by the States carried out the work in committees and subcommittees, and a committee of representatives met periodically to coordinate the work, and to review the final document.

The States had different interests in negotiating the Act. The Soviet Union's objectives were to gain acceptance of the post-World War II borders (there had been no comprehensive treaty after the war), obtain increased economic relations with the West, and keep international relations in Europe relatively stable while continuing the ideological struggle between East and West. The Eastern European countries desired increased Western economic and cultural contacts, and more flexibility in their relationships with the Soviet Union and the West. The neutral and nonaligned States, which were directly affected by East-West relations but had limited means to influence these relations, sought reduced tensions between the two blocs, and a way to participate in the European security system on an equal basis with the members of military alliances.

The Western European countries' objectives were to initiate a long-term process that would reduce tensions, develop cooperation and lower barriers between East and West, and obtain respect for human rights. A number of Western European governments believed that the OSCE should be used to obtain liberalization of the Eastern regimes and thereby provide a means for peaceful change. The United States wanted to support its European allies, but "stayed a half step behind" them throughout the process.<sup>6</sup>

The different countries' objectives can be seen in an exchange of communiqués regarding the conference. The Warsaw Pact proposed two agenda items: European security, and the expansion of economic, scientific, and technological cooperation. NATO replied that the conference should deal with "(a) The principles which should govern relations between States, including the renunciation of force, and (b) The development of international relations with a view to contributing to the freer movement of people, ideas, and information and to developing cooperation in the cultural, economic, technical and scientific fields as well as in the field of human environment."<sup>7</sup>

Given the States' different aspirations and often antagonistic views, the negotiations were protracted and difficult, but there were no internal deadlines—discussions continued until the item on the agenda was agreed to by consensus, at which time the talks moved on to the next item.<sup>8</sup> Despite the obstacles, after twenty-two months of negotiations, the Helsinki Final Act was completed in July 1975, and Stage III, a summit at which the Heads of State or Government would sign the document was scheduled for July 30–August 1, 1975.

All of the European States, East and West, strongly supported the Helsinki Final Act. The Soviet Union reportedly "reacted triumphantly" to the end of Stage II, and the top commentator of the official Soviet Tass press agency stated, "Political observers around the world note the positive results of the peace-loving Socialist foreign policy."<sup>9</sup>

---

<sup>6</sup> Henry Kissinger, in "Memorandum of Conversation," Aug. 8, 1975, Gerald Ford Cabinet Meeting.

<sup>7</sup> Maresca, *To Helsinki*, 6.

<sup>8</sup> Consensus was "understood to mean the absence of any objection expressed by a Representative and submitted by him as constituting an obstacle to the taking of the decision in question." See the Final Recommendations of the Helsinki Consultations, 1973, para. 69.

<sup>9</sup> Reuters, "Moscow Sees New Phase," Moscow, July 14, 1975.

## Chapter 2. Background of the OSCE and the HCNM

However, the text of the Final Act provoked an almost universal wave of criticism in the United States, focusing in particular on the perception that through the Act, the United States would accept the division of Europe and “sell out” Eastern Europe without any reciprocal advantage. The *Wall Street Journal* compared the Final Act to the agreement at Yalta and questioned whether U.S. President Gerald Ford was becoming the “chief apologist for the Soviet Union”; Soviet dissident Aleksandr Solzhenitsyn said that the Act betrayed the Eastern European countries and would result in their “slavery forever”; and former California Governor Ronald Reagan stated that he was against the Act and thought all Americans should be against it, and urged President Ford not to sign the document.<sup>10</sup>

However, the Act did not, as alleged, ratify the division of Europe; recognize the Soviet annexation of the Baltic States; or change U.S. support for the aspirations for freedom of peoples everywhere, including those in Eastern Europe. No borders were agreed to that had not been accepted by previous presidents or governments: for example, the treaty between West Germany and the Soviet Union had accepted the existing European boundaries as inviolable without conditions.<sup>11</sup> In contrast, the Final Act included the principle that borders could be changed by agreement and peaceful means in accordance with international law.

Furthermore, by signing the Act, the Soviets were in principle renouncing the Brezhnev Doctrine that asserted the right of military intervention to prevent deviation from socialism (the basis for the 1968 Soviet invasion of Czechoslovakia). Though the Act was denounced by many Americans of Eastern European descent, the populations of the Eastern European countries described as the principal victims were, in fact, strong supporters.

Secretary of State Henry Kissinger and President Ford defended the Final Act. Kissinger said that the objective was to manage a fundamental conflict of moral purposes and interests while preventing nuclear war—to preserve peace while defending essential U.S. values and ideals.<sup>12</sup> He also emphasized that the potential consequences of nuclear war between the Soviet Union and the United States were so devastating that the easing of tensions between East and West was the only responsible policy that any administration could pursue. Ford said that the Act was a forward step for freedom for Eastern Europe, and that even if the goals were partly achieved, the people in Eastern Europe would be that much better off, and the cause of freedom would advance at least that far.<sup>13</sup> In his remarks on signing the Act, Ford stated his reasons for doing so:

We have learned from the experiences of the last thirty years that peace is a process requiring mutual restraint and practical arrangements.... The documents produced here represent compromises, like all international negotiations, but...they affirm the most fundamental human rights: liberty of thought, conscience, and faith; the exercise of civil and political rights; the rights of minorities. They call for a freer flow of information, ideas, and

---

<sup>10</sup> “Jerry, Don’t Go,” *Wall Street Journal*, July 23, 1975; James M. Naughton, “White House Says Pact Won’t Settle Borders in Europe,” *New York Times*, July 23, 1975; and James M. Naughton, “Ford Sees 35-Nation Charter as a Gauge on Rights in East Europe,” *New York Times*, July 26, 1975. See also “European ‘Security’ and Real Détente,” *New York Times*, July 21, 1975; Bernard Gwertzman, “Solzhenitsyn Says Ford Joins in Eastern Europe’s ‘Betrayal,’” *New York Times*, July 22, 1975; “Ford vs. Solzhenitsyn: II,” *New York Times*, July 24, 1975; and “Symbolic Journey into the Future,” *New York Times*, July 27, 1975.

<sup>11</sup> The Federal Republic of Germany (FRG) is referred to in this study as “West Germany,” and the German Democratic Republic (GDR) is referred to as “East Germany.”

<sup>12</sup> “Excerpts from Kissinger Speech Backing Lisbon’s Anti-Red Forces,” *New York Times*, Aug. 15, 1975.

<sup>13</sup> “Statement by President,” *New York Times*, July 27, 1975; James M. Naughton, “Ford Sees 35-Nation Charter as a Gauge on Rights in East Europe,” *New York Times*, July 26, 1975.

people; greater scope for the press, cultural and educational exchange, family reunification, the right to travel and to marriage between nationals of different States; and for the protection of the priceless heritage of our diverse cultures. They offer wide areas for greater cooperation: trade, industrial production, science and technology, the environment, transportation, health, space, and the oceans. They reaffirm the basic principles of relations between States: nonintervention, sovereign equality, self-determination, territorial integrity, inviolability of frontiers, and the possibility of change by peaceful means. The United States gladly subscribes to this document because we subscribe to every one of these principles.<sup>14</sup>

**Stage III.** The final stage of the Conference took place in Helsinki from July 30 to August 1, 1975, and was a summit of leaders of the thirty-five OSCE participating States—the United States, Canada, and all of the European States except for Albania. The actual signing of the Helsinki Final Act took place on August 1, 1975, and was the first time so many Heads of States or Governments had gathered around a table to sign a document. During the Summit, there was general agreement regarding the document’s historic character; however, in their remarks upon signing, many Heads of State noted that the Act was only a beginning and that a great deal of work would be needed to turn the commitments into reality. As Ford said in his remarks, “History will judge this Conference not by what we say here today, but by what we do tomorrow—not by the promises we make, but by the promises we keep.”<sup>15</sup>



Helsinki Final Act Signatories,  
President Gerald Ford signing,  
August 1, 1975

**The Helsinki Final Act.** The Helsinki Final Act was an unusual document that combined a statement of principles of security, general and specific commitments, and a framework for further development. These areas were addressed by the four original “basket” topics, and one additional topic: Questions Relating to Security and Cooperation in the Mediterranean.

**Basket I: The political-military aspects of security.** The section on “Questions Relating to Security in Europe” addressed political and military matters. The *political aspects of security* consisted of a set of ten principles guiding relations between States (the Helsinki Decalogue), as shown.<sup>16</sup>

**The 1975 Helsinki Decalogue:**

**Declaration on Principles Guiding Relations Between Participating States**

- I. Sovereign equality, respect for the rights inherent in sovereignty
- II. Refraining from threat or use of force
- III. Inviolability of frontiers
- IV. Territorial integrity of States
- V. Peaceful settlement of disputes
- VI. Non-intervention in internal affairs
- VII. Respect for human rights and fundamental freedoms, including the freedom of thought, conscience, religion or belief
- VIII. Equal rights and self-determination of peoples
- IX. Cooperation among States
- X. Fulfillment in good faith of obligations under international law

<sup>14</sup> President Gerald R. Ford, address at the Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe, Aug. 1, 1975.

<sup>15</sup> Ibid.

<sup>16</sup> Helsinki Final Act, 1975, 3–8.

The text elaborated on each principle in lengths ranging from two to eight paragraphs. The States also declared that they considered all ten principles to be of primary significance, would apply them equally and unreservedly, and interpret each in light of all of the others.<sup>17</sup>

The principles formed an agreement regarding how States should behave towards each other, and to their own citizens. The acceptance of standards regarding the internal governance of States was a milestone in the development of security practice: through Principle VII (respect for human rights and fundamental freedoms) and the eight paragraphs that articulated the principle, the Helsinki Final Act was the first international agreement that considered respect for human rights to be a core principle of international relations, and the first to recognize a relationship between international security and how a State treats its citizens. By including Principle VII in the Decalogue, the States placed respect for human rights on the same level as such security principles as State sovereignty and territorial integrity. In the comprehensive approach to security adopted in the Helsinki Final Act, the States placed the human rights aspects of security on the same level as the political, military, and economic aspects.

The *military aspects of security* were addressed through confidence-building measures. Specific measures included the advance notice of major military maneuvers exceeding 25,000 troops, and the exchange of observers.

***Basket II: The economic, scientific and technological, and environmental aspects of security.*** The “Cooperation in the Field of Economics, of Science and Technology and of the Environment” section dealt with such matters as economic and technical cooperation, trade promotion, the harmonization of standards, and environmental protection. The Basket II measures contained fewer commitments for specific action than the other baskets, reflecting the desire of the States to avoid duplication with other international organizations such as the UN Economic Commission for Europe (which had almost the same membership as the OSCE).<sup>18</sup>

***Basket III: The human rights aspects of security.*** The “Cooperation in Humanitarian and Other Fields” section addressed a wide range of subjects such as facilitating human contacts, including family visits, family reunification, and freedom of travel; the improvement of conditions for tourism; greater access to information; and increased exchanges in the fields of culture and education. These measures were intended to “facilitate freer movement, contacts, travel, information flows, and cultural exchanges among the participating States”—but particularly between East and West, which at the time was very limited and controlled.

***Basket IV: Process.*** In the “Follow-up to the Conference” section, the States declared their resolve to continue the conference by subsequent meetings in which they would thoroughly exchange views on the implementation of the provisions of the Final Act, and by which they would deepen their relations and improve security and the development of cooperation in Europe (a process that came to be known as the Helsinki process). The Act scheduled the first follow-up meeting for 1977 in Belgrade.

***Mediterranean issues.*** The Act also addressed Mediterranean issues, for during Stage II, six nonparticipating Mediterranean States (Algeria, Egypt, Israel, Morocco, Syria, and Tunisia) made contributions and statements on various agenda items. (This area reflected the States’ view that European security had to be considered in the broader context of world security.)

---

<sup>17</sup> Helsinki Final Act, 1975, 8.

<sup>18</sup> Lehne, *The Vienna Meeting*, 8.

**The Political Status of the Helsinki Final Act.** The Helsinki Final Act was a politically binding document—not legally binding—and was referred to as an “Accord” because it did not establish any direct obligations under international law.<sup>19</sup> Unlike a treaty or agreement, the States’ intent was not to make law, but to find effective political means to strengthen security and cooperation in Europe, and the Final Act created the political and moral obligation for the States to implement the commitments contained in the document, and all subsequent documents.

**The Effect of the Helsinki Final Act.** The signing and publication of the Helsinki Final Act had immediate and unexpected consequences. Two particularly important consequences were that the Final Act stimulated the formation of the Commission on Security and Cooperation in Europe (the U.S. Helsinki Commission), and acted as a catalyst for involving individuals, groups, populations, and governments in achieving the purposes of the OSCE.

**The establishment of the Helsinki Commission.** Because of concerns about the Helsinki Final Act, in August 1975 Speaker of the House Carl Albert led a congressional delegation to the Soviet Union and Romania. During their visit, dissenters and representatives of religious communities pleaded with members of the delegation to press for the implementation of the human rights commitments in the Act. Impressed by the need to support the provisions of the Final Act, Congresswoman Millicent Fenwick introduced legislation to create a bipartisan commission to monitor and encourage compliance with the Act.

Ethnic and religious groups in the United States quickly saw in the proposed Commission a way to help their Eastern European brethren, and inundated Congress with appeals. Many members of Congress represented Americans of Eastern European descent, and both Houses overwhelmingly passed the bill. The administration objected to the legislation as encroaching on the executive branch’s prerogative to conduct foreign policy; nevertheless, on June 3, 1976, President Ford signed the bill creating the Helsinki Commission as an independent U.S. Government agency.

The Commission was comprised of senators and representatives; one member each from the Departments of State, Defense, and Commerce; and a staff. The Commission monitored and encouraged compliance with the Final Act and other OSCE commitments, contributed to the formulation of U.S. policy on the OSCE, and took a leading role in the planning and conduct of U.S. participation in the Helsinki process.

The Commission held public hearings, conducted and published research, and prepared reports. During the Cold War, the Commission became a major source of information about Soviet and Eastern European violations of the human rights provisions of the Final Act and other OSCE documents, and helped to resolve hundreds of family reunification cases across the Iron Curtain. The Commission also examined how well the United States was living up to the OSCE commitments: one major study published in 1979, *Fulfilling Our Promises: The United States and the Helsinki Final Act*, identified many shortfalls.

The Commission’s activities provided NGOs and individual citizens with a means to play a greater role in the Helsinki process; for example, the law establishing the Commission required the President to submit periodic reports on the implementation of the provisions of the Act.

---

<sup>19</sup> The participating States specifically excluded the Helsinki Final Act from registration as a treaty or international agreement under Article 102 of the Charter of the United Nations. See Helsinki Final Act, 1975, 59; Maresca, *To Helsinki*, 285. However, formal treaties concluded through the OSCE, such as the Treaty on Conventional Armed Forces in Europe (CFE), are legally binding.

These reports put the record into the public domain, gave more visibility to OSCE activities, and provided organizations with the means to increase their leverage to press for human rights.

***The establishment of human rights organizations.*** A second—and crucial—effect was that the Helsinki Final Act stimulated the formation of human rights groups within the Soviet Union, Eastern Europe, and elsewhere in the world. The Soviet Union considered the signing of the Final Act as a foreign policy victory that legitimized the post–World War II borders (and therefore Soviet hegemony over Eastern Europe), and published the entire text in the leading Soviet newspapers and magazines, and as a brochure translated into the languages of all Soviet republics.<sup>20</sup> As a result, citizens throughout the Soviet Union and Eastern Europe read that their governments had recognized human rights and fundamental freedoms, including the freedoms of thought, conscience, religion, and belief, and that their countries would act in conformity with the purposes and principles of the Universal Declaration of Human Rights (this was significant because the Soviet bloc countries had abstained from the Declaration, but *had* signed the Act).

Soon after the signing of the Final Act, dissidents in the Soviet Union and Eastern Europe began to base their demands for internal reform on provisions in the Act, particularly the human rights provisions of Basket III, and established groups to promote compliance with the Act. “Helsinki Watch” groups formed in Moscow, Ukraine, Georgia, Armenia, and elsewhere to press for the implementation of all of the provisions of the Final Act. Czechoslovakia formed “Charter 77,” aimed at the first follow-up meeting scheduled for 1977 in Belgrade, and other movements such as Solidarity in Poland justified their reform programs by referring to the Final Act. Helsinki Watch groups also formed in the West in the United States, Canada, Norway, the Netherlands, and elsewhere, and in 1982 the International Helsinki Federation for Human Rights was formed as an umbrella organization to support national groups.<sup>21</sup>

The Act provided a platform on which these groups could base their claims (and a platform that their governments had approved) and from which they could work for peaceful change. The Act had included the right of individuals to know and act on their rights, a statement that justified the existence and activity of these groups; however, members in the Soviet Union and the Warsaw Pact countries were often persecuted, imprisoned, and exiled. Nevertheless, their actions raised human rights to a higher level of prominence on the agenda of East-West relations.

**The Working of the “Helsinki Process.”** Unlike many treaties and agreements, the Act included a framework for further development. This difference was noted on the evening after the signing of the Act, when one diplomat at a farewell dinner said that now that the Final Act had been signed it would be buried and forgotten, to which another diplomat answered, “No...we have started something.”<sup>22</sup>

What the States had started was a process by which the States would periodically meet to measure progress and review the implementation of their commitments, expand areas of cooperation, and develop new standards and commitments. As agreed to in the Final Act, the first follow-up meeting began in Belgrade in 1977. Though the meeting itself resulted in little progress, the discussion regarding the implementation of Basket III issues was significant. President Jimmy Carter had directed the U.S. delegation to strongly support the human rights

---

<sup>20</sup> Ghebali, *Proceedings*, 4.

<sup>21</sup> In addition, Human Rights Watch was founded as Helsinki Watch in 1978.

<sup>22</sup> Maresca, *To Helsinki*, 198.

provisions in the Act, and during the meeting, the United States (along with France, Canada, and other countries), cited specific examples of Principle VII violations.<sup>23</sup>

At that time diplomats traditionally refrained from directly criticizing what other countries did concerning their internal affairs, and a number of States, particularly the Soviet Union, strongly objected to the idea that other countries had the right to monitor their human rights. These States invoked Principle VI (nonintervention in internal affairs) to support their position; however, the Soviet delegation in turn raised questions about alleged political prisoners in the United States—a step towards accepting the international discussion of respect for human rights within States. The meeting also set the precedent that during the implementation review sessions, States could expect direct discussion of how well each was doing in implementing the OSCE commitments—and in front of the representatives of all of the other States.

The Madrid follow-up meeting, held from November 1980 to September 1983, had more tangible results. In Basket I, the States agreed to hold a Conference on Confidence- and Security-building Measures and Disarmament in Europe (which began in Stockholm in January 1984). The Basket III discussion was again notable: delegates from many States cited and discussed over 300 specific Principle VII violations, which helped to personalize cases of human rights abuse, and gave dissident leaders some stature and protection through international attention.<sup>24</sup>

The States held a number of expert meetings during the 1980s on specific topics such as democratic institutions, the peaceful settlement of disputes, the environment, the media, economic cooperation, human contacts, and human rights. The 1985 OSCE Meeting of Experts on the Progress on Human Rights was particularly notable in that the Soviet and Eastern European delegations departed from their position that Principle VI forbade detailed discussion of respect for human rights in other countries. The Soviet delegation came to the meeting with files on human rights problems in each Western country, and in response to Western criticisms such as the denial of religious freedom, brought up problems in Western countries such as racial discrimination, homelessness, unemployment, and laws on *lèse-majesté* as a restriction on freedom of speech. This discussion was a further step in the acceptance of the idea that a government's respect for human rights was a legitimate subject for diplomatic discourse.

In Basket I the States adopted the 1986 Stockholm Document, which expanded the arms control provisions in the Helsinki Final Act, and was the first international document under which the Soviet Union accepted other States' inspections on its territory. Basket II measures such as industrial and scientific cooperation between governments, and the creation of joint ventures between companies, resulted in increased East-West economic and business contacts.<sup>25</sup>

Basket III measures resulted in increased cultural contacts and information flows across the Iron Curtain: in 1985 U.S. Secretary of State George Shultz noted that because of the Final Act, journalists could travel more easily between East and West, and that large numbers of citizens in some Eastern European countries had been reunited with their families in the West.<sup>26</sup> Developments in information technology such as faxes, computers, copy machines, and

---

<sup>23</sup> Mastny, *Helsinki, Human Rights, and European Security*, 167–169; Lehne, *The Vienna Meeting*, 16. The promotion of human rights was a primary component of President Jimmy Carter's foreign policy.

<sup>24</sup> Korey, "The Unanticipated Consequences of Helsinki," 12.

<sup>25</sup> Evers et al., *The Culture of Dialogue*, 26–27.

<sup>26</sup> U.S. Secretary of State George Shultz, "Address by U.S. Secretary of State George Shultz on the Tenth Anniversary of the Signing of the Helsinki Final Act," Aug. 1, 1985.



television assisted these contacts and information flows; for example, East Germans watched West German TV; Hungarians watched Austrian TV; and people in northern Estonia watched Finnish TV, which as Estonian President Lennart Meri said later, allowed Estonians to see how they would have been living.<sup>27</sup> Discussions in OSCE meetings reached millions of listeners, and public attention to the issues encouraged citizens in Eastern Europe to press for internal reform.

The involvement of individuals, groups, and NGOs in OSCE meetings increased the effect of the Helsinki process by such means as organizing events, generating debate on reform, and providing information to Western delegations. During the 1985 OSCE Meeting of Experts on the Progress of Human Rights, the International Helsinki Federation organized a parallel forum that brought together leading individuals from both West and East.<sup>28</sup> During the 1986 Bern Meeting of Experts on Human Contacts, Western and neutral delegations passed lists of unresolved cases of family reunification, family visits, and bi-national marriages to their Eastern European counterparts, lists that were sent back to the capitals and resulted in positive decisions on a number of cases.<sup>29</sup>

During this period, a particular method of the Helsinki process exerted a steady pressure for reform. Often a document would stipulate a general principle or commitment that was then further elaborated on in subsequent documents. The issue of family reunification can illustrate this process. During the Cold War, the Iron Curtain separated many families, and the Warsaw Pact countries did not recognize the right of freedom of movement. In the 1975 Helsinki Final Act, the States declared “their aim to facilitate freer movement and contacts, individually and collectively, whether privately or officially, among persons, institutions and organizations of the participating States,” and made commitments in the areas of “Contacts and Regular Meetings on the Basis of Family Ties,” “Reunification of Families,” “Marriage between Citizens of Different States,” and “Travel for Personal or Professional Reasons.”<sup>30</sup>

In the area of “Reunification of Families,” the States agreed in 1975 to the general principle that they would deal in a “positive and humanitarian spirit with the applications of persons who wish to be reunited with members of their family” and process applications in this area “as expeditiously as possible.”<sup>31</sup> However, in the 1983 Madrid Document, “as expeditiously as possible” was defined as normally within six months, and in the 1989 Vienna Document, the States recognized the right of freedom of movement, stating that “everyone shall be free to leave any country, including his own, and to return to his country.”<sup>32</sup>

**Changes in Europe 1986–1989 and the End of the Cold War.** Crucial changes began during the second half of the 1980s when Mikhail Gorbachev became president of the Soviet Union and initiated a program of “new political thinking” that included political and economic reforms, in particular as expressed by the terms “glasnost” (openness) and “perestroika” (restructuring). During this period, the idea gained ground in Europe that security had to be achieved with others, not against them. As Gorbachev expressed in 1987:

---

<sup>27</sup> Lehne, *The Vienna Meeting*, 47; George H. Quester, *The International Politics of Television*, New York: Macmillan, 1990, 125–130; Estonian President Lennart Meri, “Address on the occasion of the meeting of European members of the Trilateral Commission,” Oct. 12, 1996.

<sup>28</sup> Lehne, *The Vienna Meeting*, 31.

<sup>29</sup> Lehne, *The Vienna Meeting*, 32.

<sup>30</sup> Helsinki Final Act, 1975, 38–40.

<sup>31</sup> Helsinki Final Act, 1975, 39.

<sup>32</sup> Madrid Document, 1983, 17; Vienna Document, 1989, 25.

## Chapter 2. Background of the OSCE and the HCNM

The nations of the world resemble today a pack of mountaineers tied together by a climbing rope. They can either climb on together to the mountain peak or fall together into an abyss.<sup>33</sup>

At the Vienna follow-up meeting, held from November 1986 to January 1989, the Soviet leadership instructed their delegates to strive for the deepening of the Helsinki process in the spirit of the “new political thinking,” strengthen the disarmament process, overcome confrontation regarding the Basket III issues and develop humanitarian cooperation, and adopt a broad program for subsequent follow-up meetings.<sup>34</sup> At the beginning of the meeting, the Soviet foreign minister, Eduard Shevardnadze, surprised the delegations by proposing a conference on the development of Basket III human rights measures, a proposal the other States accepted.<sup>35</sup>

The Vienna meeting resulted in significant new agreements in all “Baskets.” In the political area, the States reconfirmed that they would respect each other’s right to freely choose and develop their political, social, economic, and cultural systems, but also agreed to bring their laws, regulations, practices, and policies to conform with the Helsinki Decalogue and other OSCE commitments. A second notable agreement was the establishment of a mechanism to monitor the implementation of human rights commitments, a step that recognized the legitimacy of international discussion of human rights. In the military area, the States decided to begin a second round of negotiations on Confidence- and Security-Building Measures (CSBMs).<sup>36</sup>

The Basket III section, “Cooperation in Humanitarian and Other Fields,” was renamed the “human dimension,” and new agreements included greater freedom to practice religion, a ban on jamming foreign radio broadcasts, and acceptance of the right of individuals to leave and return to their country.<sup>37</sup> This latter right had significant consequences: Hungary began to allow thousands of East Germans to cross into Austria despite a bilateral treaty that required the return of any citizens caught trying to escape to the West. East Germany accused Hungary with breaking the treaty, conspiring with West Germany, and receiving “30 pieces of silver” for each refugee, accusations to which Hungarian Prime Minister Miklos Nemeth replied, “I can only answer: Hungary has opened the borders according to the principles of the Helsinki Agreement.”<sup>38</sup>

The Soviet Union did not intervene—the foreign ministry spokesman said that though the Hungarian action was unexpected, unusual, and of some concern, the situation did not directly affect the Soviet Union.<sup>39</sup> The stream became a flood: from September to October 1989, 55,000–60,000 East Germans escaped to West Germany through Hungary, Poland, and Czechoslovakia, and another 50,000 during the first week of November.<sup>40</sup>

---

<sup>33</sup> Gorbachev, *Perestroika*, 140.

<sup>34</sup> Ghebali, *Proceedings*, 5.

<sup>35</sup> This conference was the three-meeting Conference on the Human Dimension of the CSCE, and was held in Paris in 1989, Copenhagen in 1990, and Moscow in 1991. The conference’s purpose was “to achieve further progress concerning respect for all human rights and fundamental freedoms, human contacts and other issues of a related humanitarian character.” See the Vienna Document, 1989, 34. The conference resulted in two landmark documents: the 1990 Copenhagen Document and the 1991 Moscow Document.

<sup>36</sup> This round resulted in the Treaty on Conventional Armed Forces in Europe (CFE).

<sup>37</sup> Vienna Document, 1989, 34, 8–9, 29, 25.

<sup>38</sup> Daniel Johnson, “Refugee Exodus Threatened by War of Words,” *Daily Telegraph*, Sept. 13, 1989; Ian Murray, “Hungary Keeps Door Open as Prague Stems the Flow,” *Times*, Sept. 18, 1989.

<sup>39</sup> Serge Schmemmann, “East Berlin Tells Budapest to Halt Aid to Emigration,” *New York Times*, Sept. 13, 1989.

<sup>40</sup> Magstadt, *Ethics and Emigration: The East German Exodus*, 1.

Huge demonstrations involving hundreds of thousands of people took place in East Berlin and every major city in East Germany demanding political and civil liberties, especially free elections: slogans shouted included “The wall must go,” and “No one can hinder the people’s will for democratization anymore.”<sup>41</sup> On November 8 the entire East German Cabinet of Ministers and the Politburo resigned, and on November 9, 1989, the Berlin Wall fell. The following day the Bulgarian regime fell, a week later the “Velvet Revolution” began in Czechoslovakia, and in December Romania’s government fell. As regime after regime crumbled, a wave of euphoria swept Europe.



### The OSCE 1990–1992

**New Agreements on Individual Rights, Democracy, the Rule of Law, and Economic Liberty.** With the fall of the Berlin Wall and the opening of the borders dividing Europe, the States capitalized on the readiness for change, and during the 1990–1991 period reached agreement on core values and principles for international behavior and domestic governance, particularly pertaining to individual rights, democracy, the rule of law, and the market economy. The States expressed these values and principles in a number of key documents: the 1990 Bonn Document, 1990 Copenhagen Document, 1990 Charter of Paris, and 1991 Moscow Document.

In these documents, the States agreed that the protection and promotion of individual rights was the first responsibility of governments, and that democracy would be the States’ only form of government—a decision based on the belief that pluralistic democracy based on the rule of law was the only system able to effectively guarantee individual rights.<sup>42</sup> A definition of pluralism and the rule of law was adopted as including regular free elections; the separation of party and State; an independent judiciary; and political and civil rights that included the rights of free expression, association, and assembly. Other new commitments included the market economy as the economic systems for all of the participating States; recognition of the rights of persons belonging to national minorities; and provisions regarding states of emergency, particularly that “any derogation from obligations relating to human rights and fundamental freedoms during a state of public emergency must remain strictly within the limits provided for by international law, in particular the relevant international instruments by which they are bound, especially with respect to rights from which there can be no derogation.”<sup>43</sup>

The States explicitly declared that matters concerning human rights were a legitimate concern of all other OSCE States and did not belong exclusively to a State’s internal affairs.<sup>44</sup> By accepting this *droit de regard*, or right of oversight, by the OSCE community in the area of individual rights, the States ended their debate over the balance between Principle VI (nonintervention in internal affairs) and Principle VII (respect for rights and freedoms).

<sup>41</sup> Keesing’s, “Krenz’s Visit to Moscow and Warsaw Dismissals and Demonstrations,” Nov. 1989.

<sup>42</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 3.

<sup>43</sup> Moscow Document, 1991, 41.

<sup>44</sup> Moscow Document, 1991, 29.

The acceptance of common values was reflected in Gorbachev's remarks at the 1990 Paris Summit: "We are entering into a world of new dimensions, in which universal human values are acquiring the same meaning for all and in which human freedom and well-being and the unique value of human life must become both the foundation and basis for universal security and the supreme criterion by which we measure progress."<sup>45</sup>

**The Shift to Implementation and Institutionalization.** During the Cold War, the OSCE focused primarily on reducing tensions, preventing conflict between States, and setting and developing standards and values. However, during the early post-Cold War period, the focus shifted to two areas: implementation of the new principles and values, and responding to the new threats arising in Europe. The situation was not stable: the former Warsaw Pact countries faced formidable challenges that included transitioning to liberal democratic governments; establishing a rule of law based on individual rights; the massive restructuring of their economies; and the emergence of old and new ethnic tensions and rivalries, which in a number of cases erupted into violence. New countries emerged from the breakup of the Soviet Union, often with no experience of statehood, and the number of OSCE participating States grew to over fifty. In 1992 the OSCE States described the difficulties of the period as follows:

This is a time of promise but also a time of instability and insecurity. Economic decline, social tension, aggressive nationalism, intolerance, xenophobia and ethnic conflicts threaten stability in the [O]SCE area. Gross violations of [O]SCE commitments in the field of human rights and fundamental freedoms, including those related to national minorities, pose a special threat to the peaceful development of society, in particular in new democracies.<sup>46</sup>

The States perceived the need for the OSCE to have operational capabilities, and began to establish institutions to translate principles into practice, and to respond to the new threats. The States established a Council of Ministers of foreign ministers from the participating States; a Committee of Senior Officials (CSO) to assist the Council and manage day-to-day business; the Chairman-in-Office (CiO), a foreign minister who, in addition to being the foreign minister of his or her own country, would have overall responsibility for the executive action of the OSCE for a year; and regular summit meetings of Heads of State or Government.

The States established institutions such as a Secretariat to provide administrative support, a Conflict Prevention Center, and a Forum for Security Cooperation. Particularly important was the establishment of the Office for Democratic Institutions and Human Rights (ODIHR) to help the States implement their commitments regarding rights and freedoms, to include helping the new democracies develop local and central government and parliamentary structures, the judiciary, and electoral institutions and the election process. The OSCE also began to work out concepts and methods for conflict prevention and crisis management, such as "OSCE Missions" that would provide an international presence and facilitate political processes in particular States.

**The Reemergence of Ethnic Conflict.** In November 1990 the Heads of State or Government met in Paris for their first summit meeting since 1975, a meeting that formally ended nearly half a century of East and West confrontation. The Summit marked the high point of the 1989–1990 political watershed in Europe, and in that spirit of optimism, the Heads of State or Government

---

<sup>45</sup> "Speech by Soviet President Mikhail Gorbachev to the Second Summit of CSCE Heads of State or Government," Nov. 19, 1990.

<sup>46</sup> Helsinki Document, 1992, 7.

signed the Charter of Paris for a New Europe, a document that embodied the new common values and vision of the OSCE community.<sup>47</sup>

However, ethnic tensions had been rising as the Soviet Union dissolved, and during the Paris Summit meeting the States decided to convene a meeting of experts to address the issue of national minorities and the rights of persons belonging to them. These issues were discussed at the 1991 CSCE Meeting of Experts on National Minorities and the 1991 Moscow Meeting of the Human Dimension; however, that same year new conflicts broke out in Croatia, Georgia, and Moldova.

**The Creation of the Position of the HCNM.** The OSCE States perceived the need to prevent any additional ethnic conflicts from starting, but when conflict broke out in Bosnia in early 1992, the need for preventive measures became imperative. During the follow-up meeting from March to July 1992, the Netherlands put forth a proposal for a High Commissioner for National Minorities to provide early warning and promote the peaceful settlement of disputes.

During the meeting, there were extensive negotiations regarding the proposed position, for a number of States had serious concerns. The majority of OSCE States recognized only the rights and duties of individuals, not groups, and there was concern that the appointment of an HCNM could be a step towards recognizing group rights and thereby contradict the principle of equal rights and duties for all. These States also feared that one group could claim rights and privileges not available to other groups, which could lead to inequality and increased interethnic tensions.

Some States did not recognize the existence of national minorities and were not willing to acknowledge any special rights, duties, or institutions for any part of their populations. Other States were concerned that an HCNM might become an advocate for minorities and thereby exacerbate interethnic tensions *within* States by emphasizing differences between minorities and majorities, or by supporting the demands of one minority group over another. There was also fear that HCNM advocacy might cause tensions *between* States by taking sides between different ethnic groups among neighboring States, particularly regarding issues of secession or irredentism.

There was concern that minorities might “use” a High Commissioner to bypass their governments or to voice grievances and demands publicly, in particular regarding increased autonomy or secession. A serious objection concerned the HCNM’s potential involvement with minority groups that engaged in terrorist activities. Other issues concerned the working of the HCNM such as how he would decide to become involved in a minority issue, his freedom to travel, with whom he would have contact, to whom he would be accountable, and the level of confidentiality he would maintain.

The States worked out these issues and achieved consensus on a mandate for an HCNM. He would be a High Commissioner *on* National Minorities, not *for* them, a distinction that addressed a number of concerns such as advocacy. He would act under the aegis of the Council of Senior Officials (CSO), would consult the Chairman-in-Office (CiO), and would provide a strictly confidential report to the CiO after a visit.

The mandate allowed the HCNM to collect and receive information regarding the situation of national minorities from any source except people or organizations practicing or publicly

---

<sup>47</sup> The Treaty on Conventional Armed Forces in Europe (CFE) was also signed. The CFE treaty set ceilings in such areas as tanks, artillery pieces, and combat aircraft in the area between the Atlantic and the Ural Mountains, and provided for verification through the exchange of detailed information and a system of on-site inspections.

condoning terrorism or violence. He would be free to travel anywhere in the OSCE area to assess national minority issues, and during these visits could discuss questions with parties directly concerned, and where appropriate, promote dialogue, confidence, and cooperation between them. These parties included governments; regional and local authorities; and representatives of national minorities, associations, nongovernmental organizations, and religious or other groups.

The HCNM would be independent regarding which situations he would become involved in, and once involved, would act independently of all parties directly involved, and would work in confidence. If at any time he concluded that there was a *prima facie* risk of potential conflict, he would issue an early warning to the CiO, who would promptly inform the CSO.

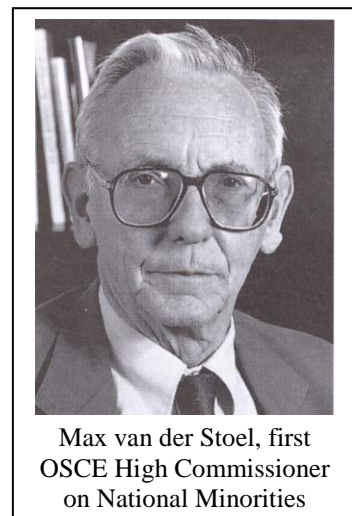
There were several restrictions on the position. The two major restrictions were that the High Commissioner would not consider national minority issues in situations involving organized acts of terrorism, and would not consider violations of OSCE commitments with regard to an individual person belonging to a national minority.

The mandate allowed the HCNM to request assistance from up to three experts on specific matters in which brief, specialized investigation and advice were needed. These experts would be selected by the HCNM from a resource list maintained at the ODIHR.

The States established the position in July 1992 at the third OSCE Summit meeting. The HCNM's official mandate specified that his function was as follows:

The High Commissioner will provide "early warning" and, as appropriate, "early action" at the earliest possible stage in regard to tensions involving national minority issues which have not yet developed beyond an early warning stage, but, in the judgement of the High Commissioner, have the potential to develop into a conflict within the [O]SCE area, affecting peace, stability or relations between participating States, requiring the attention of and action by the Council or the CSO.<sup>48</sup>

**The Selection of the First HCNM.** The mandate stated that the High Commissioner would be an "eminent international personality with long-standing relevant experience from whom an impartial performance of the function may be expected," and in September 1992, the Netherlands nominated Max van der Stoel. Van der Stoel was an experienced statesman whose career had included serving as a member of the Dutch Parliament, the Netherlands foreign minister, Rapporteur on Greece for the Council of Europe, Ambassador to the United Nations, and Special Rapporteur on Iraq for the UN Commission on Human Rights. He had been involved in the OSCE as the Netherlands foreign minister from 1973 to 1977, and as such had participated in negotiating the Helsinki Final Act. From 1989 to 1991 he headed the Netherlands delegation to the three-meeting Conference on the Human Dimension of the CSCE that resulted in the 1990 Copenhagen Document and 1991 Moscow Document. He was also an individual for whom the promotion of peace, security, and individual rights



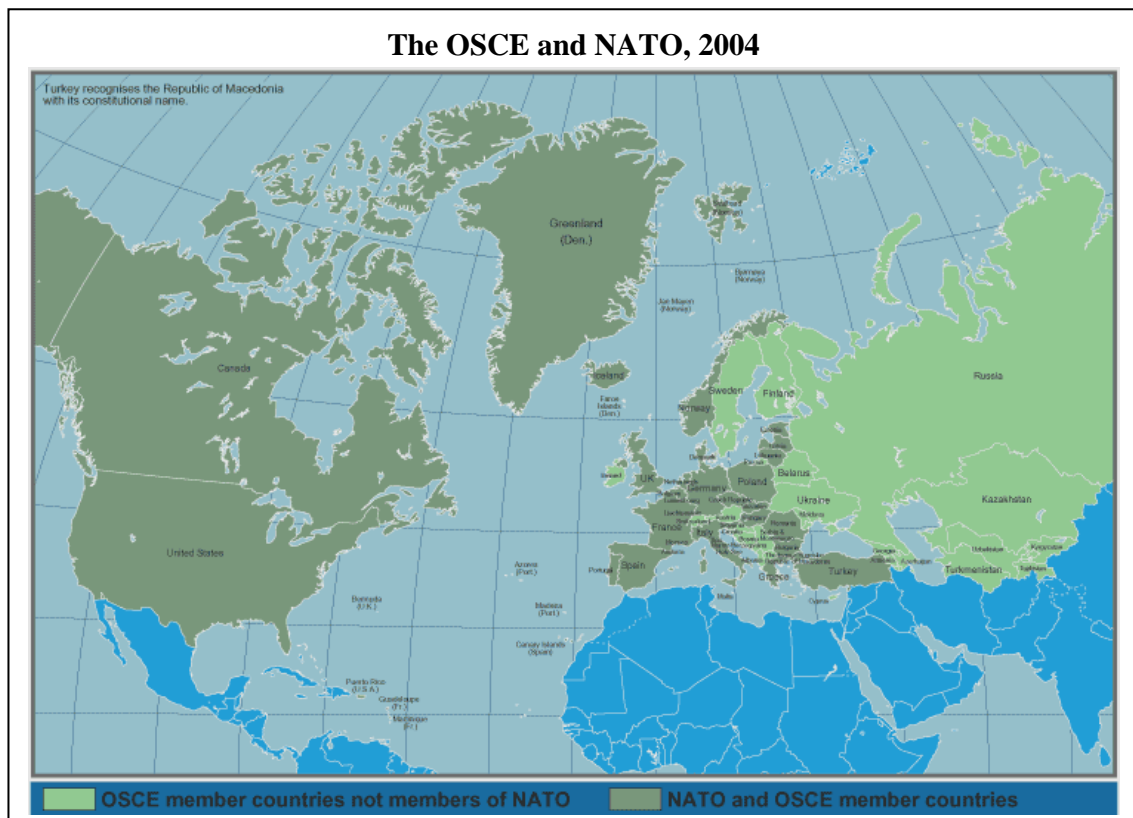
<sup>48</sup> Helsinki Document, 1992, 8.

## Chapter 2. Background of the OSCE and the HCNM

had been a constant theme during his career: he had been instrumental in ensuring the inclusion of the human rights provisions in the Helsinki Final Act, and in recognition of his outspoken support for human rights, had been selected to be the first recipient of the Freedom of Speech Award of the Roosevelt Foundation's Four Freedoms Awards.<sup>49</sup>

### The HCNM 1993–2001

**The First HCNM's Appointment and Methods.** The States appointed Max van der Stoep on December 15, 1992, and he began work on January 1, 1993. He was given an initial budget of about \$400,000, a staff of four people, and a small office in The Hague.<sup>50</sup> A private nongovernmental organization, the Foundation on Inter-Ethnic Relations (FIER), was set up to support his work through means that included research, expert consultations, publications, and projects that addressed the particular needs of countries in which he was involved.<sup>51</sup> With these resources (which had increased to \$2 million per year and a staff of sixteen by the time his tenure ended in 2001), the tools provided by his mandate, and his personal experience and skills, for the next eight years he worked to reduce interethnic tensions and prevent conflict in the OSCE area (this area consisted of over fifty participating States in Europe, Central Asia, and North America as shown on the NATO-OSCE map (the areas in light and dark green)).



<sup>49</sup> The basis for this award included “his courageous and independent voice which has spoken effectively and eloquently in the defense of human rights.” Roosevelt Study Center, [www.knaw.nl/rsc/1982.htm](http://www.knaw.nl/rsc/1982.htm) (March 10, 2001).

<sup>50</sup> Kemp, *Quiet Diplomacy in Action*, 19.

<sup>51</sup> Examples were creating low-cost textbooks for ethnic minorities in Crimea, and information pamphlets to explain citizenship requirements to minorities in Latvia and Estonia. FIER was incorporated into the HCNM's office in 1999.

## Chapter 2. Background of the OSCE and the HCNM

The HCNM had four primary responsibilities. His first responsibility was to continuously monitor the entire OSCE area for signs of tensions involving minorities that in his judgment might lead to tensions between OSCE States. His second responsibility was to engage in crisis intervention if he perceived that these tensions threatened to erupt into violence, and he did this several times. His third responsibility was to issue an early warning to the OSCE leadership if a situation developed to the point that he did not believe he could contain it with the tools available to him, and he took this action regarding Macedonia. His fourth responsibility was to work with governments to resolve minority issues that were causing tensions between OSCE States, or that might cause a serious crisis in an OSCE State. In these instances, the HCNM used particular methods.

He first examined a situation and identified all of the factors that were causing tensions, and tried to understand why the situation had developed to the point that it had. In this analysis, he was aided by the OSCE's comprehensive security approach, for he often found that ethnic tensions had their origin in economic issues or the violation of individual rights. He then identified what issues needed to be addressed, to include any political processes involved.

His next steps were to analyze the possible solutions that could be reached through dialogue and negotiation, and develop an integrated strategy to deal with all aspects of the problem. In doing so, he did not use any general solutions, believing that each situation was unique and had to be assessed in light of its own particular circumstances, and that what worked in one State might be entirely inappropriate for another. The only set guidelines he used were OSCE principles and commitments, international norms, and legal standards.

He would then prepare a formal written recommendation to the government concerned, usually in the form of a letter to the foreign minister.<sup>52</sup> In this recommendation, he provided his overall analysis of the situation, taking into account all of the legitimate interests involved, and offered specific recommendations for the resolution of the issues. The recommendations generally included practical steps such as increasing the availability of language instruction or the establishment of a council to promote dialogue, and for the consideration of specific problems. As his involvement with a country progressed, he followed up his first recommendation with others as needed.

His recommendations were not legally binding, had no enforcement mechanisms, and the extent to which they were implemented was entirely the decision of the recipient State. However, as an instrument of the OSCE, the HCNM represented all OSCE States, which gave a degree of "weight" to his recommendations, and the OSCE leadership, organizations such as the EU, and other OSCE States reinforced them.

In working with the parties involved, he searched for "concrete" solutions, promoted dialogue, encouraged parties to be specific and avoid generalities, and emphasized the requirement for mutual respect. In particular, he proposed solutions and tried to bring parties to a consensus based on convincing arguments rather than coercion. He maintained confidentiality in that his reports to the Chairman-in-Office were private; his formal recommendations were usually withheld from the public for months while States considered and responded to his recommendations; his meetings were restricted; and he seldom talked to the press.

---

<sup>52</sup> These recommendations often contained recommendations for minorities and other groups as well.



## Chapter 2. Background of the OSCE and the HCNM

His initial goal was to help governments and minorities come up with solutions that were politically possible, lasting, and in keeping with OSCE principles and international standards. However, his long-term goal was to help parties create a pattern of cooperative interaction, and the processes and institutions needed so that they would be able to deal with contentious issues in a constructive way on their own.

**The HCNM's Effectiveness.** Van der Stoel fulfilled his mandate, for during his tenure, no new conflicts involving minority tensions broke out in the OSCE area except for Macedonia in 2001, and he issued an “early warning” regarding that situation.<sup>53</sup> It is relevant to consider his accomplishments in light of the ongoing institutionalization of the OSCE, the overall state of ethnic tensions in the OSCE area, and the cost of his work.

From 1975 to 1989 the OSCE had no permanent institutional structures—the beginnings of institutionalization were initiated in 1990, with the first major steps taken during the 1992 Helsinki Summit meeting. During his first years in office, the HCNM was operating at the same time that the OSCE was trying to institutionalize and simultaneously respond to the security situation in Europe. (The OSCE did not formally become an organization until January 1, 1995.)

The overall situation of ethnic tensions in Europe was a second significant factor. In 1992 the participating States expressed the security situation in Europe as follows:

For the first time in decades we are facing warfare in the [O]SCE region. New armed conflicts and massive use of force to achieve hegemony and territorial expansion continue to occur. The loss of life, human misery, involving huge numbers of refugees have been the worst since the Second World War. Damage to our cultural heritage and the destruction of property have been appalling.<sup>54</sup>

In all of these ongoing conflicts, ethnic tensions were a primary or major contributing cause, and rising tensions elsewhere increased the expectation that additional conflicts were likely, particularly as economic conditions in Eastern Europe worsened, resulting in growing hardships and insecurity for large segments of populations.

The HCNM expended very few resources, particularly when compared to the consequences and costs of conflict. The consequences of the 1991–1992 conflicts in Europe included thousands of lives lost; widespread suffering; massive refugee flows; regional instability; new waves of hatred; the destruction of irreplaceable cultural heritage; and large economic costs for the countries directly involved, neighboring countries, and the international community. For example, during the five-year period from 1992 to 1996, the conflict in Bosnia alone cost the international community \$54 billion: in contrast, the HCNM's eight-year tenure cost a total of less than \$8 million—less than \$1 million per year.<sup>55</sup> In this context, if the HCNM prevented even one conflict, his work was very cost-effective.

Van der Stoel also made contributions beyond the fulfilling of his mandate, such as advancing conflict prevention concepts, and contributing to the implementation of international standards on minority rights, particularly regarding political participation, education, and language. For example, a number of minority-related international standards were established in the 1990s,

---

<sup>53</sup> Note that Yugoslavia was suspended from the OSCE during most of the HCNM's tenure.

<sup>54</sup> Helsinki Document, 1992, 7.

<sup>55</sup> Brown and Rosecrance, *The Costs of Conflict*, 225; *OSCE Handbook*, 2000, 34; and Kemp, *Quiet Diplomacy in Action*, 19–20.

most notably the 1990 Copenhagen Document and the Council of Europe's Framework Convention for the Protection of National Minorities. However, in order to provide some guidelines on how to put these standards into practice, Van der Stoel commissioned a group of international experts to draw up recommendations on issues that he felt needed further clarification. These experts developed three sets of recommendations: *The Hague Recommendations Regarding the Education Rights of National Minorities*, 1996; *The Oslo Recommendations Regarding the Linguistic Rights of National Minorities*, 1998; and *The Lund Recommendations on the Effective Participation of National Minorities in Public Life*, 1999. Though the *Recommendations* were not binding on the participating States, they had a significant impact, for example, by being incorporated into national legislation.<sup>56</sup>

His work was widely recognized as having been effective, though he was often criticized by extreme nationalists on both sides of an issue, and sometimes by the governments of the States in which he was involved. The Commission on Security and Cooperation in Europe (the U.S. Helsinki Commission) repeatedly recognized the effectiveness of his work in its reports, as did the U.S. presidents' reports on the OSCE. Many governments bestowed awards and recognition on him, and at the end of his tenure, the OSCE Permanent Council held a special meeting at which the first agenda item was "Homage to Mr. Max van der Stoel, OSCE High Commissioner on National Minorities."<sup>57</sup>

**The Focus of the Study.** The HCNM's methods and skills contributed to his effectiveness as HCNM; however, this study did not focus on these aspects of his work, but on his use of the OSCE principles. Chapter 3 shows the derivation of the principles that Van der Stoel used in his work as HCNM, for not all of the principles he relied on had been clearly articulated as principles. The study then examined his application of the principles in three intervention cases, and the effect on security when these principles were implemented.

\*\*\*

---

<sup>56</sup> Kemp, *Quiet Diplomacy in Action*, 63.

<sup>57</sup> "Special Meeting of the Permanent Council (343rd Plenary Meeting), June 22, 2001. The only other agenda item was "Any other business."

## Chapter 3. The OSCE Security Principles

### Introduction

This chapter presents the results of Phase I of the study: the identification, articulation, and documentation of the OSCE security principles. This step was required because the High Commissioner on National Minorities (HCNM) relied on these principles when making his recommendations; however, the principles were not stated explicitly in any one document, but rather in a series of documents adopted by the States.

### The OSCE Security Principles 1993–2001

**The OSCE Principles.** Content analysis of selected OSCE documents revealed twenty security principles in effect from 1993 to 2001. These principles can be divided into three groups: principles guiding relations between OSCE States; principles guiding the protection and promotion of individual rights within States; and principles guiding implementation, review, and development processes.

**Group I: Principles Guiding Relations Between OSCE States.** Group I principles were intended to guide relations between OSCE States—that is, their international relations. Analysis showed eight principles in Group I, and these principles can be divided into four categories:

- One general principle regarding the necessity for principles guiding international relations;
- Three principles that addressed State sovereign rights and agreed-upon limitations on these rights;
- Three principles relating to the States' approach to security, which would be “comprehensive,” “cooperative,” and “common”; and
- One principle focusing on the prevention of security threats, and the use of peaceful means to reduce tensions and resolve disputes and conflicts.

**Principle 1: The development of agreed-upon principles guiding relations between OSCE States.** Principle 1 was the necessity for agreed-upon principles guiding international relations. This principle was based on the idea that States have responsibilities towards each other, and both need and benefit from consistency in their relations. The States expressed their belief in the responsibilities of governments towards each other, and their commitment to principles guiding international relations, as below:

We reaffirm the validity of the *guiding principles* and common values of the Helsinki Final Act and the Charter of Paris, *embodying responsibilities of States towards each other* and of governments towards their people.<sup>1</sup>

That the OSCE States believed that agreed-upon principles guiding international relations were necessary to achieve security is shown by the negotiation of the Helsinki Decalogue, and by statements that the Helsinki Decalogue principles had been effective in increasing international

---

<sup>1</sup> Helsinki Document, 1992, 5 (italics added).

security. One example refers to the role that the OSCE played in bringing about the end of the Cold War: “The Ten Principles of the Final Act...lighted our way towards better relations.”<sup>2</sup> A more specific example follows:

We have witnessed the end of the cold war, the fall of totalitarian regimes and the demise of the ideology on which they were based. [The OSCE] has played a key role in these positive changes.<sup>3</sup>

The States declared that abiding by OSCE principles would benefit all of their countries, and expressed their determination to fully “respect and apply these principles, as set forth in the present Declaration, in all aspects, to their mutual relations and cooperation in order to ensure to each participating State the benefits resulting from the respect and application of these principles by all.”<sup>4</sup>

***Principle 2: Respect for the sovereign rights of participating States, in particular their juridical equality, external and internal political independence, and territorial integrity.***

Principle 2 addressed government responsibilities to respect the sovereign rights of States. These rights included equality under international law (juridical equality); territorial integrity; and the right to external and internal political independence, in accordance with international law and the spirit of the Helsinki Final Act.<sup>5</sup>

“External political independence” included the right to neutrality; to belong, or not belong, to international organizations; and to be, or not be, a party to alliances or treaties. “Internal political independence” included the right of States to determine their own laws and regulations, and for each State to freely choose and develop its political, social, economic, and cultural systems. External and internal political independence included the responsibility of States to refrain from intervening in affairs, internal or external, that fell within the domestic jurisdiction of another participating State.

The States made a number of commitments pertaining to territorial integrity, expressed in three general areas: State frontiers and borders; the nonuse of force or the threat of force; and the avoidance of activities aimed at the violent overthrow of one regime by another. Three particular commitments are below:

- States would not demand, seize, or usurp part or all of the territory of any participating State; would regard all frontiers as inviolable; and would not assault any frontiers.
- States would refrain in their international relations from the threat or use of force against the territorial integrity or political independence of any State, or act in any manner inconsistent with the purposes of the UN and OSCE commitments.
- States would refrain from providing any direct or indirect assistance to terrorist activities, or to subversive or other activities aimed at the violent overthrow of another participating State’s regime.<sup>6</sup>

---

<sup>2</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 3.

<sup>3</sup> Helsinki Document, 1992, 4.

<sup>4</sup> Helsinki Final Act, 1975, 8.

<sup>5</sup> Helsinki Final Act, 1975, 4. An example of a limitation imposed by international law follows: “The participating States recognize that the exercise of...rights relating to the freedom of religion or belief may be subject only to such limitations as are provided by law and consistent with their obligations under international law and with their international commitments.” See the Vienna Document, 1989, 9.

<sup>6</sup> Helsinki Final Act, 1975, 4–6.

***Principle 3: Agreed-upon limits to State political independence in regard to OSCE commitments.*** In Principle 3, the States agreed to limit their political independence as it pertained to international law and their OSCE commitments: “[States] will ensure that their laws, regulations, practices and policies conform with their obligations under international law and are brought into harmony with the provisions of the Declaration on Principles and other [O]SCE commitments.”<sup>7</sup> Particular areas in which the States accepted limits included their form of government, respect for individual rights and fundamental freedoms, and their economic system.

*Form of government.* The States agreed to limit their political independence in that democracy would be their only form of government. This commitment was stated in the Helsinki Document: “All our countries now take democracy as the basis for their political, social and economic life.”<sup>8</sup>

*Individual rights and fundamental freedoms.* The States explicitly agreed that respect for human rights and fundamental freedoms was a legitimate area of international relations:

[The participating States] categorically and irrevocably declare that the commitments undertaken in the field of the human dimension of the [O]SCE are matters of direct and legitimate concern to all participating States and do not belong exclusively to the internal affairs of the State concerned.<sup>9</sup>

*Economic systems.* The States agreed to limit their sovereignty in the area of their economic systems. As shown below, the States committed themselves to the market economy and adherence to the rules involved:

Economic cooperation based on market economy constitutes an essential element of our relations. [We] underline the necessity of...increased integration, involving the acceptance of disciplines as well as benefits, into the international economic and financial system.<sup>10</sup>

***Principle 4: Mutual State involvement with, accountability to, and assistance to each other regarding the implementation of OSCE commitments.*** The States agreed that they would be mutually involved with and accountable to each other regarding the implementation of their OSCE commitments, and would assist each other in this area. The States would fulfill these responsibilities primarily through the OSCE.

*Mutual involvement.* The OSCE “Helsinki process” involved periodic reviews and discussion of the States’ implementation of their OSCE commitments, reviews that necessarily involved all

---

<sup>7</sup> Copenhagen Document, 1990, 3. In addition, Principle X of the Helsinki Decalogue included that the States would “fulfil in good faith their obligations under international law, both those obligations arising from the generally recognized principles and rules of international law and those obligations arising from treaties or other agreements, in conformity with international law, to which they are parties.” See the Helsinki Final Act, 1975, 8. As another example: “The participating States...will ensure in their laws and regulations and in their application the full and effective exercise of the freedom of thought, conscience, religion or belief.” See the Vienna Document, 1989, 9.

<sup>8</sup> Helsinki Document, 1992, 4.

<sup>9</sup> Moscow Document, 1991, 29. Through this commitment, the States agreed that all OSCE States had the mutual right to follow and influence developments regarding human rights in all other OSCE States. By accepting this *droit de regard*, or right of oversight, by the OSCE community in the area of individual rights, the States ended their debate over the balance between Principle VI (nonintervention in internal affairs) and Principle VII (respect for rights and freedoms). No OSCE State could use the argument of non-interference in internal affairs when human rights violations were concerned.

<sup>10</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 9.

of the States with each other.<sup>11</sup> Mutual involvement included the right for all States to follow the internal developments in all other participating States, and through the OSCE to influence these developments. An example of this commitment was stated in the 1992 Helsinki Document: the States decided “to improve their capability to gather information and to monitor developments, as well as their ability to implement decisions about further steps.”<sup>12</sup>

*Mutual accountability.* The States accepted that they were responsible to each other for the implementation of their commitments: “We recognize our accountability to each other for complying with...the guiding principles and common values of the Helsinki Final Act and the Charter of Paris.”<sup>13</sup> During the OSCE follow-up meetings, the States evaluated and discussed how well each was implementing OSCE commitments.

*Mutual assistance.* The States accepted the responsibility of mutual assistance regarding the implementation of OSCE commitments. If a State was not able to implement its OSCE commitments, or needed assistance in fulfilling its commitments, other OSCE States had the responsibility to help. One example of the States’ commitment to mutual assistance during the post–Cold War period is below:

The transition to and development of democracy and market economy by the new democracies is being carried forward with determination amidst difficulties and varying conditions. We offer our support and solidarity to participating States undergoing transformation to democracy and market economy.... In order to ensure full participation and cooperation by recently admitted participating States we are initiating a program of coordinated support.<sup>14</sup>

As a second example, the States created organizational structures to assist in establishing, strengthening, and defending the liberal democratic form of government, including the democratic and legal institutions required (the Office for Democratic Institutions and Human Rights (ODIHR) was an example). The statement below illustrates the States’ commitment to defend the democratic form of government:

[The participating States] recognize their responsibility to defend and protect, in accordance with their laws, their international human rights obligations and their international commitments, the democratic order freely established through the will of the people against the activities of persons, groups or organizations that engage in or refuse to renounce terrorism or violence aimed at the overthrow of that order or of that of another participating State.... Our States will cooperate and support each other with the aim of making democratic gains irreversible.<sup>15</sup>

***Principle 5: A comprehensive approach to security (comprehensive security).***

“Comprehensive security” was a broad approach to security that encompassed all areas that could cause tensions, disputes, or conflicts between States. The comprehensive security approach

---

<sup>11</sup> For example, in the Helsinki Final Act, the States declared their resolve to continue the process that the CSCE had initiated, by “a thorough exchange of views” on the implementation of the provisions of the Final Act and of the tasks defined by the Conference. See the Helsinki Final Act, 1975, 57.

<sup>12</sup> Helsinki Document, 1992, 15.

<sup>13</sup> Helsinki Document, 1992, 5.

<sup>14</sup> Helsinki Document, 1992, 5, 13.

<sup>15</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 24, 4.

### Chapter 3: The OSCE Security Principles

was based on the idea that security has many aspects, that tensions between States can arise from a wide range of issues, and that these security aspects and issues are interrelated. That the States took a comprehensive view of security, and believed that this view was essential to security, is shown below:

Our approach is based on our comprehensive concept of security as initiated in the Final Act. This concept relates the maintenance of peace to the respect for human rights and fundamental freedoms. It links economic and environmental solidarity and cooperation with peaceful inter-State relations.<sup>16</sup>

Through the comprehensive security approach, the States sought to increase security by providing a broad framework in which to identify and resolve tensions between them, particularly at the early stages: the States stated that they were “desirous of eliminating the causes of tension that may exist among them and thus of contributing to the strengthening of peace and security in the world.”<sup>17</sup>

The States also adopted the comprehensive security approach on the basis that the different aspects of security were interrelated. For example, the States stated that respect for human rights, democracy, and the rule of law are necessary for economic prosperity:

The free will of the individual, exercised in democracy and protected by the rule of law, forms the necessary basis for successful economic and social development.... Freedom and political pluralism are necessary [for] economic growth.... Economic liberty, social justice and environmental responsibility are indispensable for prosperity.<sup>18</sup>

The OSCE States generally used three categories or “dimensions” to express their comprehensive security approach: the political-military dimension; the economic, scientific/technological, and environmental dimension; and the “human dimension.”<sup>19</sup> The three dimensions can be shown as below.

<b>I. The Political-Military Dimension</b>	<b>II. The Economic, Scientific &amp; Technological, and Environmental Dimension</b>	<b>III. The Human Dimension: Human Rights, Democracy, and the Rule of Law</b>
--	--	---

<sup>16</sup> Helsinki Document, 1992, 10.

<sup>17</sup> Helsinki Final Act, 1975, 10.

<sup>18</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 4.

<sup>19</sup> The “human dimension” consisted of those commitments made by the OSCE States to ensure full respect for individual rights and fundamental freedoms; abide by the rule of law; promote the principles of democracy; and build, strengthen, and protect democratic institutions. In the 1989 Vienna Document, the “Cooperation in Humanitarian and Other Fields” basket was renamed as the “human dimension.”

The three dimensions correspond in general with the first three areas, or “baskets,” used in developing the Helsinki Final Act. (“Process” was the fourth original “basket,” and can be considered a fourth dimension of comprehensive security.) Note that the States considered the three dimensions to be equal in principle.

**Principle 6: A cooperative approach to security (cooperative security).** “Cooperative security” was an approach that sought to achieve security *with* others, not *against* them, and recognized that States had common interests and faced common threats. That the States committed themselves to a cooperative approach to security is shown in the name of the OSCE itself (Organization for Security and Cooperation in Europe), and the title of Helsinki Decalogue Principle IX:

*IX. Cooperation among States.* The participating States will develop their cooperation with one another and with all States in all fields in accordance with the purposes and principles of the Charter of the United Nations.<sup>20</sup>

The Charter of Paris showed that the States believed a cooperative approach was essential to security:

With all the rich diversity of our nations, we are united in our commitment to expand our cooperation in all fields. The challenges confronting us can only be met by common action, cooperation and solidarity.<sup>21</sup>

**Principle 7: An “in common” approach to security (common security).** “Common security” was an approach that viewed security as “indivisible” or “linked,” and thus needed to be pursued in common with other States.<sup>22</sup> Two examples of the States’ commitment to common security follow: “[The States recognize] the indivisibility of security in Europe,” and “security is indivisible.”<sup>23</sup> The States declared that the security of States was linked: “The security of every participating State is inseparably linked to that of all the others.... The destiny of our nations is linked to that of all other nations.”<sup>24</sup>

The common security approach recognized the need of each State for security, that the level of security in each State affects the security of other countries, and that all States need to contribute to overall security. One common security goal was equal security for all OSCE States.<sup>25</sup> The common security approach acknowledged that insecurity in one State decreases the security of other countries, and therefore the States declared that “no State in our [O]SCE community will strengthen its security at the expense of the security of other States.”<sup>26</sup>

The common security approach recognized that States had the mutual responsibility to contribute to overall security and to the advancement of individual rights. The States acknowledged “the close link between peace and security in Europe and in the world as a whole,” as well as “the need for each of them to make its contribution to the strengthening of world peace and security and to the promotion of fundamental rights, economic and social progress and well-being for all peoples.”<sup>27</sup>

---

<sup>20</sup> Helsinki Final Act, 1975, 7. A second example is the States’ declared intention to base their relations on respect and cooperation: “Our relations will be founded on respect and cooperation.” Charter of Paris, 1990, 3.

<sup>21</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 6.

<sup>22</sup> OSCE documents also refer to “common security” as “indivisibility security.”

<sup>23</sup> Helsinki Final Act, 1975; Charter of Paris, 1990, 5.

<sup>24</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 5, 6.

<sup>25</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 3.

<sup>26</sup> Helsinki Document, 1992, 10.

<sup>27</sup> Helsinki Final Act, 1975, 3.



***Principle 8: The prevention of security threats, and the use of peaceful means to reduce tensions and resolve disputes and conflicts.*** States would take actions to prevent tensions and security threats from arising, and would use peaceful means to resolve any problems that did arise. The statement below shows the States' determination to resolve disputes, prevent security threats from developing, and provide early warning of cases in which threats might arise:

The participating States have decided to strengthen the structure of their political consultations and increase their frequency, and to provide for more flexible and active dialogue and better early warning and dispute settlement, resulting in a more effective role in conflict prevention and resolution, complemented, when necessary, by peacekeeping operations. The participating States...have also decided to improve their capability to gather information and to monitor developments, as well as their ability to implement decisions about further steps. They have recommitted themselves to cooperating constructively in using the full range of possibilities within the [O]SCE to prevent and resolve conflicts.<sup>28</sup>

*Prevention.* The States declared that they would “seek effective ways of preventing, through political means, conflicts which may yet emerge.”<sup>29</sup> The States agreed to reduce the potential for misunderstanding through openness and predictability, such as through military constraints, confidence-building measures, the control of dangerous technologies, and arms control:

[The States recognize] the need to contribute to reducing the dangers of armed conflict and of misunderstanding or miscalculation of military activities which could give rise to apprehension, particularly in a situation where the participating States lack clear and timely information about the nature of such activities. [Strengthening confidence among the States will] contribute to increasing stability and security in Europe.<sup>30</sup>

*Peaceful Settlement.* The States declared that the peaceful settlement of disputes was “an essential complement to the duty of States to refrain from the threat or use of force,” and that both were “essential factors for the maintenance and consolidation of international peace and security.”<sup>31</sup> The States committed themselves to using peaceful means to settle disputes and resolve conflicts; to endeavor in good faith and a spirit of cooperation to reach a rapid and equitable solution on the basis of international law; and to act in a manner that would not endanger international peace, security, and justice. The participating States—whether or not parties to a dispute among them—committed themselves to refrain from any action that might aggravate a situation and thereby make a peaceful settlement more difficult.<sup>32</sup>

Methods that the States would use to settle differences and disputes included negotiation; mediation; arbitration; judicial settlement; early warning; conflict prevention; preventive action; fact-finding and rapporteur missions; peacekeeping; good offices; and independent advice and counsel from experts, institutions, and international organizations. If a solution was not reached by these means, the States would continue to seek a mutually agreed way to settle disputes peacefully, and authorized the OSCE leadership to take action to settle disputes and conflicts.<sup>33</sup>

---

<sup>28</sup> Helsinki Document, 1992, 15.

<sup>29</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 8–9.

<sup>30</sup> Helsinki Final Act, 1975, 10.

<sup>31</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 8.

<sup>32</sup> Helsinki Final Act, 1975, 6.

<sup>33</sup> Helsinki Final Act, 1975, 5; Helsinki Document, 1992, 15–17. In situations requiring more forceful measures, States had recourse to other international bodies with those capabilities, such as NATO or the UN Security Council.

**Group II: Principles Guiding the Protection and Promotion of Individual Rights within States.** Group II principles were intended to guide the protection and promotion of individual rights within States. Analysis showed eight principles in Group II. These principles can be divided into four categories:

- One general principle regarding the necessity for principles guiding relations between a State and its population,
- Two principles relating to the purpose and form of governments,
- Three principles relating to national minorities, and
- Two principles relating to the requirement for respect as a basis for relations.

***Principle 9: The development of agreed-upon principles guiding relations between the State and the people who comprise the State.*** Principle 9 was the necessity for agreed-upon principles guiding relations between the State and the members of the State. This principle was based on the idea that States have responsibilities towards the members of the State (as does the population to the State, and to the other members of the State), and that national and international security is affected by these relations. The States' commitment follows:

We reaffirm the validity of the *guiding principles*...of the Helsinki Final Act and the Charter of Paris, *embodying responsibilities of...governments towards their people*.<sup>34</sup>

***Principle 10: State responsibility to establish and maintain the conditions in which all members of the State are able to fully exercise their individual rights and freedoms.*** The States accepted that governments had the responsibility to establish and maintain the conditions in which all individuals are able to fully exercise their rights and freedoms. The States declared that the protection and promotion of human rights and fundamental freedoms was the “first responsibility of government.”<sup>35</sup> Regarding the importance of the individual, the States recognized and fully accepted “the supreme value of the human personality.”<sup>36</sup> The States acknowledged that individual rights and fundamental freedoms are inalienable and derive from the inherent dignity of the human person:

Human rights and fundamental freedoms are the birthright of all human beings [and] are inalienable.... Our respect for human rights and fundamental freedoms [is] irrevocable.<sup>37</sup>

Rights and freedoms...derive from the inherent dignity of the human person and are essential for his free and full development.<sup>38</sup>

The States acknowledged a relationship between international security and respect for human rights within States. The States declared that “respect for these rights and freedoms constitutes one of the foundations of the international order”; that the protection and promotion of rights and fundamental freedoms is “a vital basis for our comprehensive security”; and that the observance and full exercise of rights and freedoms are “the foundation of freedom, justice and peace.”<sup>39</sup>

---

<sup>34</sup> Helsinki Document, 1992, 5 (italics added).

<sup>35</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 3.

<sup>36</sup> Copenhagen Document, 1990, 3.

<sup>37</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 3, 7.

<sup>38</sup> Helsinki Final Act, 1975, 6.

<sup>39</sup> Moscow Document, 1991, 29; Helsinki Document, 1992, 5; Charter of Paris, 1990, 3.

***Principle 11: Democracy, a rule of law based on human rights, and the market economy as the means to ensure that all individuals are able to fully exercise their rights and freedoms.***

Principle 11 specified that the States would use democracy, the rule of law, and the market economy as the means to establish and maintain the conditions in which all individuals could exercise their rights and freedoms.

*Democracy and the rule of law.* A democratic political framework, and the rule of law, were the first two means that governments would use to protect and promote individual rights within States.<sup>40</sup> The States expressed this commitment as follows:

A democratic political framework based on the rule of law, with a functioning independent judiciary...guarantees full respect for human rights and fundamental freedoms, equal rights and status for all citizens, the free expression of all their legitimate interests and aspirations, political pluralism, social tolerance and the implementation of legal rules that place effective restraints on the abuse of governmental power.<sup>41</sup>

The States identified democracy as the source of government legitimacy and authority, declaring that “the will of the people, freely and fairly expressed through periodic and genuine elections, is the basis of the authority and legitimacy of all government.”<sup>42</sup> As the form of government required to protect and promote human rights and freedoms, the States declared that democracy would be the “only system of government” for their nations.<sup>43</sup>

*The market economy.* The market economy (economic liberty) was the third means that governments would use to protect and promote individual rights. The States declared that the market economy would be their only economic system, that economic liberty was essential for prosperity, and that they would accept the rules involved in the international economic and financial system:

Economic cooperation based on market economy constitutes an essential element of our relations. [We underline the necessity of] increased integration, involving the acceptance of disciplines as well as benefits, into the international economic and financial system.... Economic cooperation based on market economy...will be instrumental in the construction of a prosperous and united Europe.”<sup>44</sup>

The States declared that economic freedom was a right: “Everyone has the right to own property alone or in association and to exercise individual enterprise.”<sup>45</sup>

---

<sup>40</sup> A democratic political framework included a representative form of government in which the executive is accountable to the elected legislature or the electorate; the government and public authorities act in a manner consistent with law and comply with their constitutions; a clear separation between the State and political parties is maintained, in particular, political parties are not merged with the State; military forces and the police are under the control of, and accountable to, the civil authorities; judges are independent and judicial services operate impartially; and periodic, free, and fair elections are held, for which individuals and groups have the right to freely establish political parties and organizations able to compete with each other on a basis of equal treatment before the law and the authorities, and with governmental and nongovernmental observers present for national elections. See the Copenhagen Document, 1990, 3–4; Charter of Paris, 1990, 24–25.

<sup>41</sup> Copenhagen Document, 1990, 18.

<sup>42</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 24.

<sup>43</sup> “We undertake to build, consolidate and strengthen democracy as the only system of government of our nations.” See the Charter of Paris, 1990, 3.

<sup>44</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 9.

<sup>45</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 4.

### Chapter 3: The OSCE Security Principles

*The link to security.* The States believed that the protection and promotion of individual rights through democracy and the rule of law was essential for lasting security: “Full respect for human rights and fundamental freedoms and the development of societies based on pluralistic democracy and the rule of law are prerequisites for a lasting order of peace, security, justice and cooperation.”<sup>46</sup>

*Individual rights, democracy, the rule of law, and the market economy as interdependent and mutually reinforcing.* The States viewed human rights, democracy, the rule of law, and the market economy as interrelated and mutually reinforcing. The States declared that “democracy is an inherent element of the rule of law,” and that “democracy has as its foundation respect for the human person and the rule of law,” thus linking democracy and the rule of law, and focusing on the individual.<sup>47</sup> The States considered respect for human rights and fundamental freedoms as “an essential safeguard against an over-mighty State,” thus linking individual rights with limits on government.<sup>48</sup> The States expressed the relationship between democracy and the market economy, declaring that “democratic institutions and economic liberty foster economic and social progress.”<sup>49</sup> The States linked individual rights and democracy with economic progress, for example, as expressed in the statement: “Freedom and political pluralism are necessary elements in our common objective of developing market economies towards sustainable economic growth, prosperity, social justice, expanding employment and efficient use of economic resources.”<sup>50</sup>

*The primacy of individual rights.* Of particular note is the primacy that the States accorded to individual rights: the States did not view democracy, the rule of law, and the market economy as ends in themselves, but as means to support and enforce respect for human rights. One example is the statement, “Pluralistic democracy and the rule of law are essential for ensuring respect for all human rights and fundamental freedoms.”<sup>51</sup> A second example shows that the States believed that democracy supports individual rights: “Democracy is the best safeguard of freedom of expression, tolerance of all groups of society, and equality of opportunity for each person.”<sup>52</sup> That the rule of law protects and enforces individual rights and fundamental freedoms was stated in the Charter of Paris: “Human rights and fundamental freedoms...are guaranteed by law.”<sup>53</sup> That the States believed that the rule of law itself must be based on respect for human rights is shown below:

Principles of justice...form the basis of the rule of law.... The rule of law does not mean merely a formal legality which assures regularity and consistency in the achievement and enforcement of democratic order, but justice based on the recognition and full acceptance of the supreme value of the human personality and guaranteed by institutions providing a framework for its fullest expression.<sup>54</sup>

---

<sup>46</sup> Moscow Document, 1991, 28.

<sup>47</sup> Copenhagen Document, 1990, 3; Charter of Paris, 1990, 3.

<sup>48</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 3.

<sup>49</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 9.

<sup>50</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 4.

<sup>51</sup> Copenhagen Document, 1990, 2.

<sup>52</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 3.

<sup>53</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 3.

<sup>54</sup> Copenhagen Document, 1990, 3.

***Principle 12: State responsibility to ensure that national minorities are able to exercise their equal rights, to include taking special measures as needed.***<sup>55</sup> In Principle 12, States were responsible for ensuring that minorities have full equality with other citizens in exercising their rights, to include making special measures as necessary. In particular, the States specified that governments were responsible for ensuring equality under the law and nondiscrimination for minorities, for ensuring that minorities could participate fully in public affairs, and for ensuring that minorities were able to develop their identities.

*Nondiscrimination and equality under the law.* The State had the responsibility to provide equality under the law and nondiscrimination for minorities: “Persons belonging to national minorities have the right to exercise fully and effectively their human rights and fundamental freedoms without any discrimination and in full equality before the law.”<sup>56</sup>

*Participation in public affairs.* The States accepted the right of minorities to participate in government: “The participating States will respect the right of persons belonging to national minorities to effective participation in public affairs.”<sup>57</sup>

*The right to develop identity.* The States accepted that persons belonging to national minorities had the right to develop their identity whether ethnic, cultural, linguistic, or religious:

Persons belonging to national minorities have the right freely to express, preserve and develop their ethnic, cultural, linguistic or religious identity and to maintain and develop their culture in all its aspects, free of any attempts at assimilation against their will.... The participating States will respect the right of persons belonging to national minorities to [participate in public] affairs relating to the protection and promotion of the identity of such minorities.<sup>58</sup>

In the area of the right of national minorities to develop their identity, the States recognized the “rich contribution of national minorities” to society.<sup>59</sup> The States declared their determination to foster this contribution, and recognized the contributions of culture to security:

We recognize the essential contribution of our common European culture and our shared values in overcoming the division of the continent. Therefore, we underline our attachment to creative freedom and to the protection and promotion of our cultural and spiritual heritage, in all its richness and diversity.<sup>60</sup>

*Special measures as needed.* The States recognized that general respect for individual rights is not always sufficient to ensure that persons belonging to national minorities have full equality

---

<sup>55</sup> The States did not define a national minority, but stated that to belong to one was a matter of “individual choice” and that “no disadvantage may arise from the exercise of such choice.” (See the Copenhagen Document, 1990, 18). By emphasizing that each person had the right to decide whether or not to belong to a national minority, the States in effect agreed not to impose a definition. The OSCE stressed individuals rather than groups, on the basis that all groups consist of individuals acting in community, and therefore, OSCE documents usually referred to “persons belonging to national minorities” rather than to “national minorities.” Many democratic States rejected the idea of “group rights” because of the State’s focus on the individual, and because of the potential for groups to dominate individuals. However, some countries have recognized certain group rights, such as the right to education to a particular level in a group’s mother tongue.

<sup>56</sup> Copenhagen Document, 1990, 18.

<sup>57</sup> Copenhagen Document, 1990, 20.

<sup>58</sup> Copenhagen Document, 1990, 18, 20.

<sup>59</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 7.

<sup>60</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 11. The States also declared that they would implement their commitments in the cultural field as laid down in the Cracow Document (the Document of the Cracow Symposium on the Cultural Heritage of the CSCE Participating States). See the Moscow Document, 1991, 44.

with other citizens in exercising their rights and freedoms, and that sometimes special measures are needed:

The participating States will adopt, where necessary, special measures for the purpose of ensuring to persons belonging to national minorities full equality with the other citizens in the exercise and enjoyment of human rights and fundamental freedoms.<sup>61</sup>

*Link to security.* The States intended for this principle to ensure that minorities were able to fully exercise their rights, and thereby reduce tensions from minority issues. The States recognized the security aspects of respecting the rights of persons belonging to minorities, stating that respect for these rights was “part of universally recognized human rights [and] an essential factor for peace, justice, stability and democracy in the participating States.”<sup>62</sup>

***Principle 13: State responsibility to balance the interests of majorities and national minorities.*** In Principle 13 the States acknowledged their responsibility to protect the identity of national minorities and to create the conditions in which they could promote their identities, but without discriminating against others, including the majority. The States’ commitment to the general principle of balancing the interests of majorities and national minorities follows:

The participating States will protect the ethnic, cultural, linguistic and religious identity of national minorities on their territory and create conditions for the promotion of that identity. They will take the necessary measures to that effect after due consultations, including contacts with organizations or associations of such minorities, in accordance with the decisionmaking procedures of each State. *Any such measures will be in conformity with the principles of equality and nondiscrimination with respect to the other citizens of the participating State concerned.*<sup>63</sup>

***Principle 14: The fulfillment of responsibilities by national minorities.*** Minorities as well as States had responsibilities. Three specific minority responsibilities were to participate in public affairs; integrate into the wider society to a certain degree, particularly by learning the State language or languages; and to be responsible in general.

*Participation.* The fact that the State had the responsibility to ensure that minorities can participate in public affairs implied that minorities had the corresponding responsibility to participate. This implication was further supported by the fact that the States recognized the importance of democracy and the rule of law, and the involvement of the wider society, in promoting respect and balancing competing interests:

The participating States recognize that the questions relating to national minorities can only be satisfactorily resolved in a democratic political framework based on the rule of law, with a functioning independent judiciary.... They also recognize the important role of nongovernmental organizations, including political parties, trade unions, human rights

---

<sup>61</sup> Copenhagen Document, 1990, 18. Note that these rights do not give minorities extra rights but act to ensure equal respect for their dignity, in particular their identity.

<sup>62</sup> Copenhagen Document, 1990, 18.

<sup>63</sup> Copenhagen Document, 1990, 19 (italics added).

### Chapter 3: The OSCE Security Principles

organizations and religious groups, in the promotion of tolerance, cultural diversity and the resolution of questions relating to national minorities.<sup>64</sup>

*A certain degree of integration.* One minority responsibility was to integrate into the wider society to a certain degree, to include learning the State language or languages: the participating States “will endeavour to ensure that persons belonging to national minorities, *notwithstanding the need to learn the official language or languages of the State concerned*, have adequate opportunities for instruction of their mother tongue or in their mother tongue, as well as, wherever possible and necessary, for its use before public authorities, in conformity with applicable national legislation.”<sup>65</sup>

*Responsibility.* An implied duty was for minorities to be responsible: the States declared that no OSCE commitment regarding the rights of national minorities could “be interpreted as implying any right to engage in any activity or perform any action in contravention of the purposes and principles of the Charter of the United Nations, other obligations under international law or the provisions of the Final Act, including the principle of territorial integrity of States.”<sup>66</sup>

***Principle 15: State responsibility to promote a climate of respect.*** Principle 15 recognized the State’s responsibility to promote a climate of mutual respect, understanding, cooperation, and solidarity among all persons living on the State’s territory, without distinction regarding such factors as ethnicity, national origin, or religion, and to encourage the solution of problems through dialogue based on the principles of the rule of law. The States acknowledged this responsibility as below:

Every participating State will promote a climate of mutual respect, understanding, cooperation and solidarity among all persons living on its territory, without distinction as to ethnic or national origin or religion, and will encourage the solution of problems through dialogue based on the principles of the rule of law [and will] take effective measures, in conformity with their constitutional systems, at the national, regional and local levels to promote understanding and tolerance, particularly in the fields of education, culture and information.<sup>67</sup>

***Principle 16: The responsibility of all individuals and groups to respect all others and their equal rights.*** The States’ commitment to promote a climate of respect implied a corresponding responsibility for all members of the State to respect all others and their equal rights. A further implication was that respect is necessary among individuals and groups, whether the groups are based on race, ethnicity, religion, age, or however else formed. The States declared as follows:

We reject racial, ethnic and religious discrimination in any form. Freedom and tolerance must be taught and practiced.<sup>68</sup>

---

<sup>64</sup> Copenhagen Document, 1990, 18.

<sup>65</sup> Copenhagen Document 1990, 19 (italics added).

<sup>66</sup> Copenhagen Document, 1990, 20.

<sup>67</sup> Copenhagen Document, 1990, 20, 21. A second example follows: “The participating States will...foster a climate of mutual tolerance and respect between believers of different communities as well as between believers and non-believers.” Vienna Document, 1989, 8. Note that the 1975 Helsinki Final Act recognized the importance of respect—two of the ten principles of the Helsinki Decalogue included the necessity for respect.

<sup>68</sup> Helsinki Document, 1992, 7.

**Group III: Principles Guiding Implementation, Review, and Development Processes.**

Group III principles were intended to guide the interpretation and implementation of OSCE principles and commitments, and the process of reviewing their implementation and furthering their development. Analysis showed four principles in Group III.

- One principle addressed the need for States to apply all OSCE principles equally and unreservedly, and to interpret each principle in light of all of the others;
- One principle addressed the responsibility of all parties—governments, groups, organizations, and individuals—to make good faith and continuous efforts to implement all OSCE principles and commitments;
- One principle addressed the requirement to identify and build on shared values; and
- One principle addressed the need to use processes and mechanisms to develop standards and commitments, review their implementation, and respond to State requirements.

***Principle 17: The equal and unreserved application of all OSCE principles, each being interpreted taking into account the others.*** The States declared that all ten Helsinki Decalogue principles were of equal importance, that States would fully apply them all unreservedly, and that States would interpret each principle in light of all of the others. This commitment was adopted in the Helsinki Final Act, in which the States declared “their determination to respect and put

into practice” the ten principles of the Helsinki Decalogue, all of which “are of primary significance and, accordingly, they will be equally and unreservedly applied, each of them being interpreted taking into account the others.”<sup>69</sup> This commitment implied that the same standard would apply to commitments adopted in later OSCE documents. These commitments built on the original principles and commitments in the Helsinki Final Act, and developed into the OSCE *acquis* (the body of OSCE commitments), and thus all principles, standards, and commitments would be interpreted in light of the *acquis*. The States intended for all ten principles of the Helsinki Decalogue to help States achieve balanced progress towards political-military, economic, and humanitarian goals, and this intent continued for the subsequent commitments adopted.<sup>70</sup>

**The 1975 Helsinki Decalogue:  
Declaration on Principles Guiding Relations  
Between Participating States**

- I. Sovereign equality, respect for the rights inherent in sovereignty
- II. Refraining from threat or use of force
- III. Inviolability of frontiers
- IV. Territorial integrity of States
- V. Peaceful settlement of disputes
- VI. Non-intervention in internal affairs
- VII. Respect for human rights and fundamental freedoms, including the freedom of thought, conscience, religion or belief
- VIII. Equal rights and self-determination of peoples
- IX. Cooperation among States
- X. Fulfillment in good faith of obligations under international law

***Principle 18: Good faith and continuous efforts by all governments, organizations, groups, and individuals to fully implement OSCE commitments.*** In Principle 18 the States recognized that the full implementation of their OSCE commitments would take time and continuous effort,

<sup>69</sup> Helsinki Final Act, 1975, 4, 8 (italics added).

<sup>70</sup> Vienna Document, 1989, 3.



### Chapter 3: The OSCE Security Principles

and that progress towards shared objectives required the active involvement of all parties, to include persons, groups, organizations, institutions, and governments:<sup>71</sup>

[The OSCE is] a process whose activities go far beyond formal relations among governments to involve citizens and societies of the participating States. Successful efforts to build a lasting peaceful and democratic order and to manage the process of change require more structured and substantive input from groups, individuals, States and organizations outside the [O]SCE process.... Encouragement of this sense of wider community remains one of our fundamental goals.<sup>72</sup>

The States' focus on the involvement of individuals was shown in the Helsinki Final Act when the States confirmed "the right of the individual to know and act upon his rights and duties" in the field of human rights.<sup>73</sup> The States also sought synergy from the efforts of the different participants, to include international organizations:

We are convinced that a lasting and peaceful order for our community of States will be built on mutually reinforcing institutions, each with its own area of action and responsibility. [Work] should be so structured as to avoid duplication of the work of international organizations and overcommitment of scarce resources.<sup>74</sup>

The States identified the relationship between security and the involvement of all parties and their good faith efforts, referencing the "major role that nongovernmental organizations, religious and other groups and individuals [had] played in the achievement of the objectives of the [O]SCE."<sup>75</sup> When the OSCE began to institutionalize in 1990, the States said that organizations, groups, and individuals needed to be involved in the OSCE's "activities and new structures...in order to fulfill their important tasks."<sup>76</sup>

The States recognized that they are not perfect and may not always live up to all of their OSCE commitments. For example, the States acknowledged that they needed "to improve the implementation of their [O]SCE commitments and their cooperation in [the areas of] respect for all human rights and fundamental freedoms, human contacts and other issues of a related humanitarian character."<sup>77</sup> However, the States did not think that failing to meet standards meant that the standards were invalid, but rather that the States had to continue to try, and perhaps try harder: the States recognized that "the implementation of the relevant provisions of the Final Act and of the Madrid Concluding Document requires continuous and intensified efforts."<sup>78</sup>

***Principle 19: State responsibility to find and build on shared values.*** Principle 19 addressed the requirement to identify and build on shared values in international relations and relations within States. The States recognized the existence of shared values in a number of OSCE documents, such as in the statement, "We welcome the commitment of all participating States to

---

<sup>71</sup> Helsinki Final Act, 1975, 7, 8; Copenhagen Document, 1990, 2.

<sup>72</sup> Helsinki Document, 1992, 25, 5.

<sup>73</sup> Helsinki Final Act, 1975, 7.

<sup>74</sup> Helsinki Document, 1992, 10, 59.

<sup>75</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 12.

<sup>76</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 12.

<sup>77</sup> Vienna Document, 1989, 34.

<sup>78</sup> Vienna Document, 1989, 25.

our shared values [and reaffirm the] common values of the Helsinki Final Act and the Charter of Paris.”<sup>79</sup>

*Relations between and within States.* In the area of *relations between States*, a primary basis on which the States would conduct their international relations was adherence to the shared values of democracy, the rule of law, market economy, and respect for individual rights and freedoms. The commitment to individual rights and democracy was stated in the Charter of Paris: “Our relations will rest on our common adherence to democratic values and to human rights and fundamental freedoms.”<sup>80</sup> The commitment to the rule of law was shown by Principle X of the Helsinki Decalogue: that the States would “fulfil in good faith their obligations under international law.”<sup>81</sup> In the economic area, the States declared that “economic cooperation based on market economy constitutes an essential element of our relations and will be instrumental in the construction of a prosperous and united Europe.”<sup>82</sup>

In the area of *relations within States*, the States agreed that shared values would guide the relationship between the State and the people who comprise the State. The States declared that their common aims were “respect for human rights and fundamental freedoms, including the rights of persons belonging to national minorities, democracy, the rule of law, economic liberty, social justice and environmental responsibility.”<sup>83</sup>

*Development of shared values.* The States recognized that shared values and norms develop over time, for the Helsinki process began with the search for agreement on common values, and the process continued for decades. The need for progress was also reflected in the fact that the States recognized that principles, standards, values, and norms sometimes need advancement, and declared that the States were “determined to support and advance those principles of justice which form the basis of the rule of law,” and that they would “consider new steps to further strengthen norms of behavior on politico-military aspects of security.”<sup>84</sup>

*The link to security.* The States recognized that the advancement of shared values was essential to both national and international security. The States declared that the advancement of human rights, democracy, and the rule of law was essential to strengthening peace and security: “We are convinced that in order to strengthen peace and security among our States, the advancement of democracy, and respect for and effective exercise of human rights, are indispensable.”<sup>85</sup> The States considered that the ideas in the Final Act were powerful, and had played a significant role in bringing about the end of the Cold War:

We recognize the essential contribution of our common European culture and our shared values in overcoming the division of the continent.... The courage of men and women, the strength of the will of the peoples and the power of the ideas of the Helsinki Final Act have opened a new era of democracy, peace and unity in Europe.<sup>86</sup>

---

<sup>79</sup> Helsinki Document, 1992, 5.

<sup>80</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 5.

<sup>81</sup> Helsinki Final Act, 1975, 8.

<sup>82</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 9.

<sup>83</sup> Helsinki Document, 1992, 5.

<sup>84</sup> Copenhagen Document, 1990, 3; Helsinki Document, 1992, 10.

<sup>85</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 5.

<sup>86</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 11, 3.

***Principle 20: The use of processes and mechanisms to develop standards and commitments, review their implementation, and respond to State requirements.*** Principle 20 addressed the need for processes and mechanisms to develop standards and commitments, review their implementation, and respond to new requirements.

*Processes and mechanisms to develop standards and commitments, and review their implementation.* The fact that the States included “Follow-up to the Conference” in the Helsinki Final Act showed the importance the States attributed to processes. The States further demonstrated their commitment to process by executing what came to be known as the Helsinki process, a process in which the States met periodically to review the implementation of OSCE agreements, expand areas of cooperation, and set new standards and norms. The States recognized a relationship between processes and security, declaring that “the exchange of views constitutes in itself a valuable contribution towards the achievement of the aims set by the [O]SCE.”<sup>87</sup>

*Responsiveness to State requirements.* The States recognized that processes and mechanisms needed to be flexible and responsive to State requirements, concerns, and situations. To illustrate, during its first fifteen years, 1975–1989, the OSCE itself was a process with no permanent organizational structures. However, in 1990 the States expanded this process and began to establish institutional structures through which they could work in practical and sustained ways to implement their commitments. Two examples of the States’ commitment follow: “Our common efforts to consolidate respect for human rights, democracy and the rule of law, to strengthen peace and to promote unity in Europe require a new quality of political dialogue and cooperation and thus development of the structures of the [O]SCE,” and the OSCE “has been instrumental in promoting changes; now it must adapt to the task of managing them.”<sup>88</sup> A third example follows: “We reaffirm our commitment to settle disputes by peaceful means. We decide to develop mechanisms for the prevention and resolution of conflicts among the participating States.”<sup>89</sup>

To illustrate, the States took a number of actions in response to the outbreak of ethnic conflict in Europe in the early 1990s. When they perceived an “urgent need for increased cooperation on, as well as better protection of, national minorities,” they convened a meeting of experts on national minorities, and later created the position of the High Commissioner on National Minorities (HCNM).<sup>90</sup>

*The link to security.* The States recognized the connection between international security and agreed-upon processes and mechanisms. The example below refers to the effectiveness of the Helsinki process, in which principles of international and intrastate relations played a major role:

The participating States welcome with great satisfaction the fundamental political changes that have occurred in Europe since the first Meeting of the Conference on the Human Dimension of the CSCE in Paris in 1989. They note that the [O]SCE process has contributed significantly to bringing about these changes and that these developments in turn have greatly advanced the implementation of the provisions of the Final Act and of the other [O]SCE documents.<sup>91</sup>

---

<sup>87</sup> Belgrade Document, 1978, 2.

<sup>88</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 12; Helsinki Document, 1992, 9.

<sup>89</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 5.

<sup>90</sup> Charter of Paris, 1990, 7.

<sup>91</sup> Copenhagen Document, 1990, 2. During the 1975 to 1989 period, the CSCE (OSCE) exerted a steady pressure for individual rights and reform that made a major contribution to the end of the Cold War—NATO identified the

The States intended for the implementation of these principles to increase their security. The list of the twenty OSCE security principles follows.

**Table 3–2. The OSCE Security Principles 1993–2001**

**I. Principles Guiding Relations Between OSCE States.** *Achieving security requires:*

1. The development of agreed-upon principles guiding relations between OSCE States.
2. Respect for the sovereign rights of participating States, in particular their juridical equality, external and internal political independence, and territorial integrity.
3. Agreed-upon limits to State political independence in regard to OSCE commitments.
4. Mutual State involvement with, accountability to, and assistance to each other regarding the implementation of OSCE commitments.
5. A comprehensive approach to security (comprehensive security).
6. A cooperative approach to security (cooperative security).
7. An “in common” approach to security (common security).
8. The prevention of security threats, and the use of peaceful means to reduce tensions and resolve disputes and conflicts.

**II. Principles Guiding the Protection and Promotion of Individual Rights within States.**

*Achieving security requires:*

9. The development of agreed-upon principles guiding relations between the State and the people who comprise the State.
10. State responsibility to establish and maintain the conditions in which all members of the State are able to fully exercise their individual rights and freedoms.
11. Democracy, a rule of law based on human rights, and the market economy as the means to ensure that all individuals are able to fully exercise their rights and freedoms.
12. State responsibility to ensure that national minorities are able to exercise their equal rights, to include taking special measures as needed.
13. State responsibility to balance the interests of majorities and national minorities.
14. The fulfillment of responsibilities by national minorities.
15. State responsibility to promote a climate of respect.
16. The responsibility of all individuals and groups to respect all others and their equal rights.

**III. Principles Guiding Implementation, Review, and Development Processes.**

*Achieving security requires:*

17. The equal and unreserved application of all OSCE principles, each being interpreted taking into account the others.
18. Good faith and continuous efforts by all governments, organizations, groups, and individuals to fully implement OSCE commitments.
19. State responsibility to find and build on shared values.
20. The use of processes and mechanisms to develop standards and commitments, review their implementation, and respond to State requirements.

---

adoption of the Helsinki Final Act as one of the three most significant events to which the end of the Cold War can be traced. See *NATO Handbook* (Brussels: NATO Office of Information and Press, 1992), 57.

## Chapter 3: The OSCE Security Principles

As a group, the twenty OSCE principles formed an OSCE security concept that can be summarized as below:

Security depends on the development and implementation of principles guiding three areas: how States deal with each other and resolve problems; the protection and promotion of individual rights within States; and the processes and mechanisms to review and advance values, principles, and commitments.<sup>92</sup>

The twenty OSCE principles, and the OSCE security concept, can be summarized into ten principles in three groups as below.

<b><u>Table 3–3. The OSCE Security Concept Principles 1993–2001 Summary</u></b>	
<b>I. Principles Guiding Relations Between OSCE States</b> <ol style="list-style-type: none"><li>1. Respect for the sovereign rights of States, with agreed-upon limits on sovereign rights.</li><li>2. Mutual State involvement, accountability, and assistance regarding OSCE commitments.</li><li>3. A comprehensive, cooperative, and common security approach.</li><li>4. The prevention of security threats, and the use of peaceful means to reduce tensions and resolve disputes and conflicts.</li></ol>	<b>II. Principles Guiding the Protection and Promotion of Individual Rights within States</b> <ol style="list-style-type: none"><li>5. State responsibility to ensure respect for individual rights through democracy, the rule of law, and the market economy.</li><li>6. Rights and responsibilities pertaining to national minorities.</li><li>7. Respect for the equal rights of all, and a climate of respect.</li></ol>
<b>III. Principles Guiding Implementation, Review, and Development Processes</b> <ol style="list-style-type: none"><li>8. Good faith, full, equal, and continuous efforts to implement OSCE principles and commitments.</li><li>9. The development and advancement of shared values.</li><li>10. Processes and mechanisms.</li></ol>	

The study uses the twenty OSCE principles for case analysis, and in Chapters 4, 5, and 6, the effect on security when these principles were implemented is examined.

\*\*\*

---

<sup>92</sup> See Appendix A for an articulation of the OSCE security concept.

## Chapter 4. Case Study 1: OSCE Principles and Ukraine

### Background of Ukraine and the Crimean Peninsula

**Background of Ukraine.** In 1992 Ukraine was the second largest country in Europe in terms of area (604,000 square kilometers), and the fifth largest in terms of population (52 million). Ukraine had significant natural resources, and during the Soviet era had produced about half of the total Soviet output of coal and iron ore, and over a quarter of the agricultural output. Ukraine was also highly involved with the Soviet military, industrial, and space complex, and maintained the third largest number of nuclear weapons in the world.<sup>1</sup>

After having been part of Russia for two centuries, Ukraine declared its independence in December 1991 after very high support (over 90 percent) in a referendum on independence.<sup>2</sup> With independence, the Ukrainian government faced a number of challenges, which included integrating with Central Europe and the West; maintaining satisfactory relations with Russia; addressing issues pertaining to nuclear weapons; managing the transition from a command economy to a market economy; finding an acceptable balance between the central government and Crimean authorities regarding Crimean autonomy; strengthening the Ukrainian national identity; and addressing environmental problems, particularly industrial pollution and the continuing effects of the 1986 Chernobyl nuclear power plant accident.

The first HCNM, Max van der Stoep, was involved in three primary issues in Ukraine: the relationship between the Ukrainian government and the Crimean administration; the integration of returning Crimean Tatars and other minorities that Stalin had deported to Central Asia during World War II; and language and culture, particularly concerning ethnic Russians. These three issues were distinct in most respects, but complicated the overall situation; for example, tensions between ethnic Russians and Tatars in the Crimean peninsula increased the volatility in the area. This study addresses the case of Crimean autonomy within Ukraine.

**Background of Crimea.** The Crimean peninsula had belonged to Russia from 1783 to 1954, at which time the Soviet Union transferred it to the Ukrainian Soviet Socialist Republic.<sup>3</sup> Crimea was important for its historical associations, climate, and strategic location on the Black Sea, and contained the city of Sevastopol, where the main headquarters of the Black Sea Fleet was located.<sup>4</sup> Sevastopol was also a city with a special status—called by tradition a “city of Russian glory”—and during the Soviet era had been administered directly from Moscow.



<sup>1</sup> Ukraine did not have operational control over the weapons, however, was widely believed to be capable of overcoming this obstacle, and of developing their own nuclear weapons program.

<sup>2</sup> Simonsen, *Conflicts in the OSCE Area*, 98.

<sup>3</sup> A frequent reason given for this transfer was to commemorate the 300th anniversary of the “friendly union” between the Russian and Ukrainian peoples.

<sup>4</sup> The Black Sea Fleet (BSF), which had consisted of 300 vessels manned by both Russian and Ukrainian crews, had been the Soviet Union’s major naval fleet in the Black Sea region, and was a major source of tension between

## Chapter 4. OSCE Principles and Ukraine

On the eve of independence, the population of Crimea consisted of about 67 percent ethnic Russians; 26 percent ethnic Ukrainians, many of whom spoke Russian; and 7 percent other minorities. In the 1991 referendum, 54 percent of the voters in Crimea favored Ukrainian independence.<sup>5</sup>

After independence, the Ukrainian government granted a degree of autonomy to Crimea, and in March 1992, negotiations between Ukrainian and Crimean representatives resulted in a draft Ukrainian law in which Crimea would be a constituent part of Ukraine, but autonomous and with its own constitution. The Ukrainian parliament (the Verkhovna Rada) adopted the law in April, but did not promulgate it because in May 1992 the Crimean parliament took a number of separatist actions. The parliament declared Crimea to be a sovereign State, introduced a new constitution, claimed the right to separate citizenship, called for a treaty between the “States” of Crimea and Ukraine, and announced a projected referendum on independence.

The Ukrainian government annulled the independence decree, but as a compromise passed a second law in June that gave Crimea greater autonomy and a special economic status. The Crimean leaders agreed to cancel the referendum, which ended the immediate crisis; however, because this second law was also not promulgated, the relationship between the central government and Crimea remained unclear.

In 1992 the Ukrainian economy declined significantly—GDP and exports fell by about 20 percent while inflation increased over 1000 percent.<sup>6</sup> In 1993 fuel shortages contributed to further economic decline as Russia—on which Ukraine was dependent for most of its oil and natural gas—raised prices and cut deliveries, causing rolling brownouts in the major cities and further reductions in industrial production. As conditions continued to deteriorate, a number of ethnic Russians in the highly industrialized eastern sections—where economic dislocation had hit the hardest—began to consider seeking closer ties with Russia. Separatist sentiment also grew in Crimea.

Actions of Russian nationalists in Russia and Crimea further increased tensions between Ukraine and Russia, and within Ukraine. In May 1992 the Russian parliament passed a resolution declaring that the 1954 transfer of Crimea to Ukraine had been illegal and that talks between Russia and Ukraine were necessary to settle the “question” of Crimea, and later declared Sevastopol to be a Russian city. Tensions increased regarding the Black Sea Fleet as Russian and Ukrainian naval servicemen attempted to “nationalize” their respective vessels, and in July 1993 demonstrators in Sevastopol demanded that the fleet, and the city, be returned to Russian control. Ukraine appealed to the UN, after which the security council issued a statement (S/26118) supporting Ukraine’s territorial integrity.

Russian foreign policy became more nationalistic after a significant number of ultranationalists were elected in December 1993, and by early 1994 many OSCE States, including the United States, feared that tensions in Ukraine could escalate into a situation that might result in Russian military intervention. A U.S. National Intelligence Estimate (NIE), leaked in January 1994, warned that without international assistance, Ukraine’s worsening economic problems could result in ethnic Russians in the eastern region pressing for secession

---

Russia and Ukraine—issues included the division of assets and costs, servicing arrangements, and liability for pollution. See Simonsen, *Conflicts in the OSCE Area*, 102.

<sup>5</sup> Drohobycky, *Crimea: Dynamics, Challenges, and Prospects*, xxvii.

<sup>6</sup> Keesing’s, “Economic Reform Package,” Nov. 1992.

and unification with Russia, actions that the Ukrainian majority would seek to prevent by force if necessary.<sup>7</sup> The NIE warned that any attempt at secession might lead the government to retain some nuclear weapons—which Ukraine had agreed to give up—to deter Russian involvement.

Also in January 1994, Crimea held elections for its first president, who after taking office began working on economic agreements with Ukrainian President Leonid Kravchuk. Shortly thereafter the HCNM became involved.

### **The HCNM's Intervention and Recommendations**

**1994.** The HCNM began his intervention in Ukraine with his first visit in February; however, he did not issue any formal recommendations at that time. A week later, the Ukrainian parliament passed a decree that recognized extensive Crimean rights in areas that included economics, culture, and natural resources, but also outlined the limits of Crimea's autonomy. In particular, the decree reaffirmed that the Crimean Republic, as an autonomous constituent part of Ukraine, had no State sovereignty, and as such could not have independent foreign, military, and financial policies; separate citizenship; or a constitution that contradicted that of Ukraine. The decree gave Crimea one month to bring its constitution and legislation in line with Ukrainian law.

The Crimean administration did not comply, and a “battle” of laws and decrees ensued, with the Crimean authorities issuing laws and decrees, and the Ukrainian authorities annulling or countermanding them. When the Crimean president, Yuri Meshkov, issued a decree requiring Crimean residents to perform military service only on the peninsula, the Ukrainian government declared the act to be illegal. When Meshkov issued decrees dismissing the heads of the ministry of the interior and the security service, the Ukrainian president annulled the decrees, whereupon the Crimean authorities established parallel offices. In an act that the Ukrainian government interpreted as emphasizing Crimea's ties to Russia, the peninsula adopted Moscow time, one hour ahead of Ukraine's capital, Kiev.

Tensions increased, and the HCNM made a second visit in early May, after which he issued his first formal recommendation on May 15, 1994. In this recommendation, he outlined that the status of Crimea would need to be resolved in accordance with the OSCE principle of territorial integrity, writing as follows:

In the Trilateral Agreement between Ukraine, the Russian Federation, and the United States concluded in February of this year, the parties reaffirm their commitment, in accordance with the [O]SCE Final Act, to respect the independence and the sovereignty and the existing borders of the [O]SCE member States, and recognize that border changes can be made only by peaceful and consensual means. In my view this text is highly relevant in considering the problem of Crimea, even more so because as far as I am aware no [O]SCE State has expressed opinions deviating from it.<sup>8</sup>

---

<sup>7</sup> Daniel Williams and R. Jeffrey Smith, “U.S. Intelligence Sees Economic Plight Leading to Breakup of Ukraine,” *Washington Post*, Jan. 25, 1994; Simon Tisdall, “Leaked US Report Warns Ukraine's Economic Crisis Could Spark Civil War and Scupper Nuclear Arms Deal,” *Guardian*, Jan. 26, 1994.

<sup>8</sup> HCNM letter to Foreign Minister Anatoly Zlenko, May 15, 1994.



## Chapter 4. OSCE Principles and Ukraine

The disagreements between the Ukrainian government and the Crimean administration were significant, and included issues regarding the ownership of real estate and natural resources; taxation; citizenship; foreign relations; symbols; language of administration; and military, judicial, and security functions. Nevertheless, the HCNM wrote that though these “considerable differences” would not be easy to resolve, he believed they were, in fact, solvable. In this regard, he pointed out the willingness to compromise that the president of Ukraine had expressed:

It is...of great importance that President Kravchuk has repeatedly expressed the view that the autonomous Republic of Crimea ought to have considerable latitude in the economic field. For instance, in the spring of 1992, he expressed his willingness to leave to Crimea the control of all “territorial property” on the peninsula. He also stated that Crimea ought to have “all the necessary political and legal opportunities to realize its special potential.”<sup>9</sup>

The HCNM’s overall recommendation was for Ukraine and Crimea to find an arrangement that would maintain the territorial integrity of Ukraine while providing significant Crimean autonomy, especially in the economic field, and he recommended that the two parties reach a settlement containing a complete program of steps to resolve the issues. To assist in this process, he recommended that the Ukrainian government accept OSCE assistance in the form of a team of constitutional and economic experts to look into the situation and provide suggestions for solutions.

The Ukrainian government immediately accepted the recommendation regarding the experts; however, a few days later the Crimean parliament increased tensions by its actions, most notably adopting a law that restored the 1992 constitution that the Ukrainian government had abolished. The government viewed this action as a violation of Ukrainian legislation and as a step towards secession, and suspended the law until Crimea’s constitution was brought in line with Ukraine’s laws. The Crimean parliament responded by suspending the Ukrainian government’s suspension. The Ukrainian government moved additional soldiers to Sevastopol, and the Crimean authorities increased the guards on some buildings in Simferopol, the Crimean capitol. Within a few days both parliaments agreed to conduct talks, but reached no agreement.

The OSCE States became increasingly concerned about the situation, and in June 1994, the OSCE Committee of Senior Officials expressed its deep concern and reaffirmed its commitment to Ukrainian sovereignty and territorial integrity, called on the Crimean authorities to refrain from any action that could cause the situation to worsen and endanger the prospects for a fruitful dialogue, and asked all OSCE States to act in ways that would strengthen the OSCE principles regarding territorial integrity and the inviolability of borders. The committee also noted that Ukraine was “determined to continue dealing with the issue by peaceful means, without resorting to the use of force and in conformity with [O]SCE principles.”<sup>10</sup>

In July tensions eased somewhat when the supposedly pro-Russian Leonid Kuchma, who had been supported by an overwhelming majority of Crimea’s voters, assumed the Ukrainian presidency. In addition, popular support for the separatist Crimean administration decreased as criminal activity increased—activity that included violent clashes between criminal clans with alleged ties to the Crimean authorities.

---

<sup>9</sup> Ibid.

<sup>10</sup> 27th Meeting of the Committee of Senior Officials, Journal No. 3, June 15, 1994, Annex 2.

However, in August tensions rose again when the battle of laws and decrees resumed. The Sevastopol city council declared Sevastopol to be a Russian city subject only to Russian legislation, a resolution that the Ukrainian authorities denounced as illegal. The Ukrainian parliament adopted amendments to the constitution to annul Crimean laws if they were not brought in line with national legislation, and assumed the right to dissolve the Crimean legislature.

Concern for rising tensions resulted in an OSCE decision to establish an OSCE Mission to Ukraine, with headquarters in Kiev and a branch in Simferopol. The Mission's initial responsibilities included supporting the work of the HCNM and the experts, and to carry out its tasks in accordance with OSCE principles, such as the support of the sovereignty and territorial integrity of Ukraine.

**1995.** In December 1994 the first Chechen War broke out, and a few months later—while the Russian government was occupied with the war—the Ukrainian government took a number of actions regarding Crimea. In March 1995 the government again rejected Crimea's 1992 constitution, abolished the post of the president of Crimea, and issued a decree temporarily subordinating the Crimean administration directly to the central government. Kuchma also stated that Crimea's parliament could be dissolved if it continued to violate Ukraine's constitution.

The Russian government initially stated that issues concerning Crimea were internal Ukrainian affairs, a response that the Crimean parliament chair called feeble.<sup>11</sup> The parliament appealed to Russia not to conclude a pending friendship treaty with Ukraine without taking Crimea's interests into consideration, and the Russian parliament issued a statement warning Ukraine of the negative consequences of its actions on Russian-Ukrainian relations. A Russian member of parliament protested Ukraine's policies towards Crimea by tearing up a Ukrainian flag, an action reciprocated in the Ukrainian parliament. Russian President Boris Yeltsin stated that the friendship treaty could not be signed until Russia was certain that Crimean rights were being respected, and several days later, Foreign Minister Andrei Kozyrev said that the use of military force to protect Russians in the near abroad might be necessary in some cases.<sup>12</sup>

The HCNM appealed to both sides to exercise restraint, but the Crimean parliament passed several resolutions aimed at regaining powers: most confrontational was a decision to hold a referendum in June on several issues including the 1992 constitution; the most recent Ukrainian law on Crimea; and a proposal for the economic and political unity of Russia, Ukraine, and Belarus. Ukraine called the referendum unconstitutional and threatened further actions, and the Crimean parliament withdrew the question regarding the Ukrainian law, but not the referendum.

The HCNM took steps to avert a crisis. In May he mediated a roundtable discussion for Ukrainian and Crimean representatives, held in a neutral setting (Locarno, Switzerland) that provided for confidential, open, and face-to-face communication. The roundtable resulted in agreement in a number of important areas, most particularly that the unpromulgated 1992 Ukrainian law on Crimean autonomy could be the basis for Crimea's status. In addition, Crimea agreed to stop its plans for a referendum, and the Ukrainian government agreed not to dissolve the parliament.

---

<sup>11</sup> Keesing's, "Annulment of Crimean Constitution and Presidency," March 1995.

<sup>12</sup> David Hearst, "Russia 'Ready to Use Force in Ex-Soviet States,'" *Guardian*, April 19, 1995.

## Chapter 4. OSCE Principles and Ukraine

The HCNM issued an unpublished formal recommendation at the end of the roundtable regarding these agreements. In that formal recommendation he recommended that both sides avoid any action that could lead to an escalation of tensions, and that the Ukrainian and Crimean parliaments create an organ of conciliation to suggest solutions to differences that might arise during dialogue about relevant legislation. Tensions decreased, for the Ukrainian government was prepared to accept wide autonomy for Crimea (a position encouraged by other OSCE States and the EU) and in June 1995, progress increased when more moderate politicians were elected in Crimea, creating a situation more conducive to compromise.

The HCNM held a second roundtable in September 1995 that focused primarily on the problems of the formerly deported peoples, in particular the Tatars. After this roundtable, the HCNM held a series of meetings in Ukraine and Crimea, then issued his third formal recommendation on October 12, 1995. He recommended that the division of responsibilities between the Ukrainian government and the Crimean administration balance the interests of the two parties, and that the Ukrainian government, as the central government, be responsible for defense, security, and foreign policy, but to consult Crimea before concluding treaties with special relevance for Crimea, and to include Crimean representatives in a number of official delegations to other States. He also recommended that Crimea have the right to open trade offices abroad and conclude international agreements regarding commercial and cultural questions; however, he recognized the authority of the central government by adding the phrase, “taking into account the Ukrainian legal order.”

In the financial area, he recommended that the Ukrainian government make arrangements to ensure that an equitable portion of the revenues from Crimean natural resources and Ukrainian property in Crimea, be used for Crimea’s benefit, and that Crimea delete references to Crimean citizenship in its constitution. Regarding the problem of the status of Sevastopol, he recommended that the parties set up a tripartite commission of representatives of Ukraine, Crimea, and Sevastopol to develop proposals for increasing cooperation between Sevastopol and Crimea in various fields.

In November Crimea adopted a new constitution that incorporated many of the HCNM recommendations and significantly narrowed the disputed points. However, the constitution still conflicted with that of Ukraine’s, and tensions increased.

**1996–1997.** Tensions continued to increase in February and March 1996, particularly as the Ukrainian parliament worked on a new constitution that would reduce many Crimean powers. In response the Crimean parliament convened a special session, issued a sharp statement, and a few days later adopted a resolution “proposing” that the Ukrainian parliament approve Crimea’s constitution by the end of March, warning that if Ukraine ignored “the expression of the Crimeans’ will,” the Crimean parliament would have the right to have the constitution approved by a referendum.<sup>13</sup> These actions, which took place shortly before a scheduled visit by Yeltsin to sign a friendship treaty between Russia and Ukraine, led to a new escalation in tensions, and the visit—which had been postponed several times before—was postponed again.

In March the HCNM organized a third roundtable to concentrate on the disputed provisions in the Crimean constitution, and included independent experts as observers to assist in legal and economic questions. The roundtable resulted in significant progress: the two sides agreed on a

---

<sup>13</sup> Kulyk, *Revisiting a Success Story*, 55.

basic framework for Crimea's status within Ukraine, and agreement was achieved on all but twenty provisions of the Crimean constitution.

To consolidate the gains made, the HCNM prepared a formal recommendation in which he recommended that the Ukrainian government immediately approve the Crimean constitution except for the articles still in dispute. He also recommended changes to the Crimean constitution such as replacing "Republic of Crimea" with "the Autonomous Republic of Crimea," and "citizens of Crimea" with "citizens of Ukraine residing in Crimea." He recommended that the parties make a special effort to speed up the resolution of the remaining differences, recommending that the Crimean parliament consider the disputed articles within a month, and that the Ukrainian parliament consider the new Crimean proposals as soon as possible thereafter.

On April 3 the HCNM again visited Ukraine, and after consulting the experts who had attended the roundtable, prepared a detailed formal recommendation on April 5. In this recommendation, he urged both sides to maintain the momentum in narrowing the gap between their positions, make determined efforts to resolve the remaining differences "soon," and do nothing that could lead to a worsening of the atmosphere in which future negotiations would be conducted. Similarly, he recommended that Crimea refrain from organizing a referendum, or "poll," on the Crimean constitution, and that the Ukrainian government not deviate from the aim of providing Crimea with substantial autonomy in the fields that did not belong to the exclusive responsibility of Ukraine. He also made a number of legal suggestions.

The Ukrainian government implemented the HCNM's recommendation by adopting a new "Law on the Autonomous Republic of Crimea" in which it approved all but 20 articles, or parts of articles, out of a total of 136.<sup>14</sup> A number of the unapproved articles dealt with "Crimean citizenship," the status of Sevastopol, and signs of sovereignty such as official symbols.

During April and May both parliaments focused on internal controversies regarding the draft Ukrainian constitution—which was considered the most important document regarding the future of Crimea—and made little effort to resolve the remaining issues. In June the Ukrainian parliament adopted a new constitution that included the status of Crimea; however, continuing controversies in the Crimean parliament hampered progress during the rest of 1996 and early 1997. During March and April 1997 there were protests in Crimea calling for the return of the Crimean peninsula to Russia, and actions in Russia further exacerbated tensions. In April the upper house of the Russian parliament voted to make Sevastopol a special international city, and a Russian Federation Council commission decided that Russia should declare Sevastopol an international city under international law, and that the 1954 Supreme Soviet resolution that gave Crimea to Ukraine had been unconstitutional and had exceeded Soviet President Nikita Khrushchev's authority.<sup>15</sup>

However, the situation changed significantly on May 31 when Presidents Yeltsin and Kuchma signed the long-awaited friendship treaty, which unequivocally supported the territorial integrity of both countries. The presidents also made final agreements on the Black Sea Fleet. These actions decreased Crimean separatist hopes for Russia's help.

In June the Crimean parliament adopted amendments to Crimea's constitution, but the amendments neither brought the Crimean constitution in line with Ukraine's, nor fully

---

<sup>14</sup> Kemp, *Quiet Diplomacy in Action*, 225.

<sup>15</sup> Minorities at Risk, *Chronology for Crimean Russians in Ukraine*.

implemented the HCNM's recommendations. The Ukrainian parliament reacted negatively, a reaction exacerbated by the Crimean parliament's subsequent actions, which included passing resolutions declaring the Russian language to be Crimea's only official language, and demanding that Russian be a state language in all of Ukraine.

**1998–2001.** Controversies continued within and between the two parliaments. For example, in January the Ukrainian president issued a decree to replace the elected mayor of Yalta with a presidential appointee, an action that incensed the Crimean parliament and provoked responses that included appealing to the Ukrainian parliament and the Council of Europe. The Crimean parliament also voted to put three highly controversial items on its agenda: holding a referendum on restoring the 1992 constitution, declaring Crimea to be a Russian autonomy, and adopting Russian as the area's official language.

However, the situation significantly improved in March 1998 when a large number of more "pragmatic" individuals were elected to the Crimean parliament. This group preferred to develop a new constitution rather than amend the previous draft, and therefore concentrated on developing a draft acceptable to the Ukrainian parliament, and passed the new draft in October 1998. There were still discrepancies with the Ukrainian constitution and laws, but the Ukrainian parliament took actions that brought the entire issue to a swift conclusion. The Ukrainian parliament inserted a provision into the Crimean document that any current and future acts of the Crimean parliament and executive branch would be invalid if they contradicted Ukrainian legislation, and on December 23, 1998, approved the Crimean constitution. For the rest of the HCNM's tenure, though some tensions continued, they remained at a reduced level.

### **OSCE Principles, Implementation, and Effect on Security**

From 1994 to 1996 the HCNM made five formal recommendations in which he made specific recommendations to the Ukrainian government, the Crimean administration, and both of them (see Appendix E). All of the recommendations either referred to, or were related to, OSCE principles.

**The HCNM's Overall Recommendation.** The HCNM's overall recommendation to the Ukrainian government and Crimean administration was to find an arrangement that would maintain Ukraine's territorial integrity yet give Crimea significant autonomy, and this recommendation referred to several OSCE principles. The part of the recommendation that addressed territorial integrity was related to Principle 2, which addressed the rights of sovereignty, including the territorial integrity of States. The part of the recommendation that addressed Crimean autonomy involved Principles 10–15, which addressed the responsibilities of the government to create and maintain the conditions in which all members of the State, including minorities, were able to exercise their basic rights. The recommendation that the parties develop a complete program of steps to resolve the issues concerning autonomy for Crimea pertained to Principle 20, which addressed the development and use of processes.

The Ukrainian government and the Crimean administration implemented the HCNM's overall recommendation; however, the implementation took nearly five years, and did not occur until nearly two years after the HCNM made his last recommendation in April 1996. (After this recommendation, the HCNM continued to visit Ukraine but did not prepare any additional formal recommendations.)

**The HCNM's Specific Recommendations.** The OSCE principles contained in the HCNM's specific recommendations, and their implementation, can be addressed in groups. One group of specific recommendations addressed the division of responsibilities between the central government and the Crimean administration. These recommendations were most closely related to Principle 13, that governments balance the interests of majorities and national minorities. In this case, the Ukrainian government and the Crimean administration were trying to find a division of responsibilities that would balance the interests of the Ukrainian majority in Ukraine as a whole, with the interests of the ethnic Russian majority in Crimea. These recommendations were implemented in general, though with a significant delay.

A second group of specific recommendations encouraged the parties to maintain the momentum they had developed through negotiations, and to move the negotiation and settlement process forward. These recommendations referred to Principle 18, that individuals, groups, NGOs, and governments at all levels make good faith and continuous efforts to fully implement their OSCE commitments. Some of these recommendations also involved Principle 19, that the participating States find and build on areas of agreement regarding shared values (in this instance, an OSCE principle that referred primarily to international relations was applied to relations within the State). Both parties implemented these recommendations, but often with a long delay.

A third group of recommendations were intended to prevent progress that had been made from unraveling, such as for both parties to refrain from actions that would lead to escalating tensions. These recommendations referred to Principle 6, that the States use a cooperative approach to security, and Principle 8, which addresses the need to prevent security threats from arising. The Ukrainian government and the Crimean administration eventually implemented these recommendations, but in many cases during the 1994–1998 period, one side or the other, or both, disregarded the recommendations.

A fourth group pertained to creating formal mechanisms and institutional processes for dialogue and to resolve differences, problems, or disputes, including those that might arise in the future. These recommendations (none of which were implemented) related to Principle 20, which addressed processes.

The HCNM made one specific recommendation to the Ukrainian government regarding the acceptance of OSCE assistance, particularly in the form of a team of constitutional and economic experts. This recommendation pertained to Principle 4, that the participating States accept their mutual involvement with, accountability to, and assistance to each other in matters pertaining to the implementation of their OSCE commitments. This recommendation also contained an implied recommendation that the OSCE States provide this assistance. This recommendation was implemented, as was the implied recommendation to the OSCE States.

**Observed Effects on Security.** There were observed effects on security when parties implemented the OSCE principles in the HCNM's recommendations. These effects could be seen regarding a number of specific recommendations, but primarily regarding the HCNM's overall recommendation.

*The HCNM's specific recommendations.* There was an observable effect on security for most of the specific recommendations when implemented. These effects were observed primarily in the increase or reduction of tensions as the two parties made—or did not make—progress in their

negotiations. Of particular note was that at the end of each of the three roundtables, political leaders of both Ukraine and Crimea made statements that indicated reduced tensions.

No effect on security was observed for the several recommendations that the HCNM made regarding creating formal mechanisms as the means of resolving problems or disputes. However, since each roundtable resulted in progress in resolving issues, it may be that formal mechanisms could have helped resolve these issues earlier, and thereby eased national and international tensions.

***The HCNM's overall recommendation.*** The principal observed effects on security resulted from the implementation of the HCNM's overall recommendation. When this recommendation was implemented in December 1998, there was evidence of a decrease in tensions within Ukraine, between Ukraine and Russia, and in the OSCE area.

*Tensions within Ukraine.* Within Ukraine, the "battle" of laws and decrees ceased; mutual threats between the Ukrainian government and the Crimean administration ended; and there were no further reports of the buildup of forces. No outbreaks of violence, or threats of violence, pertaining to separatism in Crimea were reported in either Keesing's Record of World Events or the Lexis-Nexis database during the years from 1999 to 2006. However, some Crimeans, and Russian political leaders and citizens, did not become reconciled to Crimea being part of Ukraine.<sup>16</sup>

*Tensions between Ukraine and Russia.* The settlement of the issue of Crimean autonomy within Ukraine reduced tensions between Ukraine and Russia: there were no reports in Keesing's Record of World Events or the Lexis-Nexis database from 1999 to 2006 of threats of force by Russia, or of the Russian parliament making efforts to regain Crimea. However, other factors contributed to the reduction of tensions such as agreements regarding the Black Sea Fleet, and the 1997 treaty between Ukraine and Russia that unequivocally recognized Crimea as part of Ukraine.

*Regional tensions.* The primary evidence of reduced tensions in the region was that the OSCE closed its Mission to Ukraine on the basis of the successful implementation of its mandate, and because the Ukrainian government and the Crimean administration had normalized their relations.<sup>17</sup> There was no further direct HCNM involvement, and no situations regarding Crimea arose that required the attention of the OSCE leadership.<sup>18</sup>

\*\*\*

---

<sup>16</sup> Woehrel, *Ukraine Current Issues and U.S. Policy*, June 7, 2006, 1.

<sup>17</sup> "OSCE Mission to Ukraine," *OSCE Newsletter*, April 1999, 6. However, the OSCE established an OSCE Project Coordinator in Ukraine to plan, carry out, and monitor the activities of OSCE institutions.

<sup>18</sup> As of the time of the completion of this study in 2007.

## Chapter 5. Case Study 2: OSCE Principles and Estonia

### Background of Estonia

In 1992 Estonia was a small country of about 45,000 square kilometers and 1.6 million people, located on the Baltic Sea across from Finland, and next to Russia and Latvia. World War I and the Russian Revolution created the conditions in which the Estonians, among other peoples, could achieve independence from Russia. In 1917 the Russian government was in increasing disarray—the Tsar’s abdication in March was followed by a Provisional Government until the Bolsheviks seized power in November—and Estonia proclaimed its independence in February 1918. The Bolshevik government attempted to reconquer Estonia but was unsuccessful, and in 1918 signed the Treaty of Brest-Litovsk, acknowledging the independence of Estonia, Latvia, Lithuania, Poland, Ukraine, and Finland. At the end of World War I, the Bolshevik government repudiated the treaty and invaded Estonia again, but was repulsed after heavy fighting, and in 1920 signed the Treaty of Tartu, relinquishing all claims to the territory of Estonia in perpetuity.



With independence, Estonia adopted a liberal democratic constitution with a parliamentary form of government, and the independence period of 1918–1940 was one of advancement in many areas. Compulsory education was introduced, a public library system established, and Estonian students had access to higher education for the first time. Through economic reform Estonia shifted from being a food importer to an exporter. New archives and museums stimulated research into Estonian culture, and cultural autonomy was also given to minorities—unusual legislation in Europe in 1925.

Estonian independence ended in June 1940 when the Soviet Union invaded and then occupied Estonia until July 1941. This period was marked by summary arrests and executions; the collectivizing of farms; the expropriation of property to include all church property and all private holdings over 30 hectares (74 acres); and the Sovietization of political, educational, and cultural life (to include the destruction of Estonian memorials, cultural symbols, and library books, and closing activities such as cooking clubs).<sup>1</sup>

Resistance, which included guerilla warfare, resulted in reprisals, purges, and deportations. On June 14, 1941, planned mass deportations began simultaneously in all three Baltic States as ordered by the “Instructions Regarding the Manner of Conducting the Deportation of the Anti-Soviet Elements from Lithuania, Latvia, and Estonia.”<sup>2</sup> Over 10,000 Estonians—about 1 percent of the population—were deported to Siberia and other places in the Russian hinterland. The list included many political and religious leaders, but most were women, children, and the elderly.

In July 1941 German forces drove out the Soviet army, and Germany occupied Estonia until September 1944 when the Soviet army retook Estonia. The German occupation was as harsh as

<sup>1</sup> Laar, *War in the Woods*, 8; Raun, *Estonia and the Estonians*, 150–152.

<sup>2</sup> Shtromas, “The Baltic States as Soviet Republics,” 86.



## Chapter 5. OSCE Principles and Estonia

that of the Soviets, and by the time the war ended, Estonia had lost more than one-fifth of its population and nearly half of its infrastructure.

With the end of World War II, the Sovietization of Estonia resumed; however, resistance continued, particularly through guerilla warfare by the “forest brethren,” actions to which the Soviets responded with a number of measures including a massive purge. On March 25 and 26, 1949, about 21,000 Estonians—more than 2.5 percent of the population—were arrested and deported, and in the following month more than half of the farms in Estonia were collectivized.<sup>3</sup> The guerilla movement continued, nevertheless, until its final suppression in the 1950s.<sup>4</sup>

The Soviet Union integrated Estonia into its centrally-planned economy, and brought in large numbers of Russians and Russian-speakers to work in new industrial factories, along with large numbers of Soviet military forces and secret police. The Soviet Union’s immigration and other policies (such as arrests, executions, and deportations), combined with losses from World War II, significantly altered Estonia’s demographics. The share of ethnic Estonians in the population declined from 88 percent in 1934 to 62 percent in 1989, and the share of Russian-speakers increased from 8 to 35 percent.<sup>5</sup> In the northeast areas bordering Russia the population became 90 percent Russian, and the two largest towns in the northeast, Narva and Sillamäe, became almost entirely Russian, as did nearly half of the capital, Tallinn. Estonia also became one of the most highly militarized areas in the Soviet Union, with the military controlling more than 500 installations, nearly 2 percent of Estonian territory, and over 130,000 troops.<sup>6</sup>

Russification was implemented, with the Russian language taught in schools and imposed for official use throughout the country. By 1989 almost all Estonians had learned Russian but few Russians could speak Estonian.

The breakup of the Soviet Union provided the opportunity for Estonia to reassert its independence, which was accomplished in 1991 after a period of primarily nonviolent struggle, though support for an independent Estonia among the Russian-speakers varied. In July 1989 thousands of Russian-speakers demonstrated against Estonian independence, and in August went on a countrywide strike. In a 1990 survey, about 11 percent of the Russian-speakers supported Estonian independence, whereas 77 percent believed that Estonia’s future lay within the Soviet Union.<sup>7</sup> In the 1991 independence referendum, 25–30 percent of the non-Estonians (primarily Russian-speakers) voted in favor of independence, but 35–40 percent voted against.<sup>8</sup>

The new Estonian government faced a number of serious challenges, including preserving independence, managing the transition from a command economy to a market economy, and restoring the Estonian national identity. The government saw integration with the West, particularly through membership in the EU and NATO, as the best way to achieve security, and vigorously pursued joining these and other international institutions.

Asserting that the Republic of Estonia had continued to legally exist under international law throughout the Soviet period, in February 1992 the Estonian parliament (the Riigikogu) reinstated Estonia’s prewar citizenship law, which gave automatic citizenship only to those

---

<sup>3</sup> Estonian government, “25 March 1949”; Raun, *Estonia and the Estonians*, 179.

<sup>4</sup> The last fighter died in 1978 while trying to evade capture. See Nordberg, *The Baltic Republics*, 26.

<sup>5</sup> Estonian government, “Population by Nationality.”

<sup>6</sup> Bajarnas, *The Baltic States: Security and Defence After Independence*.

<sup>7</sup> Sarv, *Integration by Reframing Legislation*, 24.

<sup>8</sup> *Ibid.*, 24.

who had held it before the Soviet occupation, and their direct descendants.<sup>9</sup> The law's provisions, which were similar to those of many OSCE countries, did not discriminate on the basis of ethnicity, and as a result, 80,000 non-Estonians became citizens automatically under the law. However, more than 500,000 Russians and Russian-speakers who had come during the Soviet era (and their children, many of whom had been born in Estonia), were left with an uncertain citizenship status.

In response, Russians and Russian-speakers at a large meeting in Tallinn protested against Estonian independence and called for the establishment of a "Baltic Russia." In April, energy workers in Narva went on strike, demanding automatic Estonian citizenship for all Russians in Estonia. The Russian government also reacted, and the Russian parliament passed a resolution warning of economic sanctions, suspending the cooperation treaty with Estonia, and threatening to raise the issue at the UN. In October Russian President Boris Yeltsin suspended Russian troop withdrawals from the Baltic States.

The Estonian parliament began working on a second law that would clarify the status of noncitizens, and provide policy and procedures for naturalization. However, progress was slow and the legislation was not finished when the OSCE appointed the first HCNM, Max van der Stoep, in December 1992. At the time that the HCNM began his work, tensions were increasing among the Estonian government, the Russian-speaking minority, and the Russian government, raising fears among the OSCE States that these tensions might escalate to armed conflict. The sources of these tensions included a border dispute, the withdrawal of Russian troops, payment of Russian military pensions, jurisdiction over the Estonian Orthodox Church, environmental damage incurred during the Soviet period, and issues regarding ethnic Russians and other Russian-speakers in Estonia.<sup>10</sup> This last issue—that interethnic tensions within Estonia were causing tensions between two OSCE States, Estonia and Russia as the kinstate of the Russians in Estonia—was the HCNM's direct concern.

Within Estonia there were several sources of interethnic tensions. The preservation of independence was a crucial government objective, and Estonians feared that the Russians in Estonia might contribute to the loss of this independence.

The Russian military presence in Estonia was also viewed as a threat to independence. In March 1993 about 7,600 Russian troops were reported as still being in Estonia, as well as a large number of military retirees.<sup>11</sup> Many Estonians believed that Russia had deliberately kept military officers in Estonia (often retiring them as early as their thirties and forties) so as to form a fifth column that could work for Russian intelligence, cause instability in Estonia, or even support an invasion—the Estonian defense plan considered the retired Russian officers as a primary internal threat to the country's security.<sup>12</sup> The Russian military also continued to conduct maneuvers such as an April 1993 map exercise that Estonian military officials said focused on the "capture and keeping of strategically important targets in the Baltic States until the arrival of main forces," a charge that Russia called deliberate disinformation.<sup>13</sup>

---

<sup>9</sup> Many countries had not recognized the occupation of Estonia as legal under international law. For example, an Estonian embassy was maintained in the United States throughout the Soviet period.

<sup>10</sup> An example of the environmental damage was an 80-acre pond containing about 8 million tons of radioactive waste, with minor leakage into the Baltic Sea. See Raun, *Estonia and the Estonians*, 255.

<sup>11</sup> Woehrel, *Russians in the Baltic States*, 8.

<sup>12</sup> Sarv, *Integration by Reframing Legislation*, 51.

<sup>13</sup> Woehrel, *Russians in the Baltic States*, 9–10.

Another government priority was to restore the suppressed Estonian national identity and culture, in particular the Estonian language. A complicating factor was a legacy of bitterness from the Soviet era, which as the HCNM wrote, had “led to great suffering for virtually all Estonian families.”<sup>14</sup>

Tensions on the part of the Russians included fears of being forced to leave Estonia or of being deprived of rights if they were able to stay. There was deep resentment over the citizenship issue, for under the new law they were considered as immigrants—a resentment intensified because many Russians had voted for independence on the assumption that they would be Estonian citizens. A third source of tension was that Estonian efforts to reestablish their language and culture were seen by many Russians as aimed against them.

### **The HCNM Intervention and Recommendations**

**1993–1994.** In early 1993 the HCNM made his first visit to Estonia. At that time interethnic tensions were increasing over a number of issues, particularly over the provisions of a draft law on naturalization requirements. Of most concern to the noncitizens were two draft provisions: first, that everyone who had not applied for Russian or Estonian citizenship would have to apply for a residence permit within a year or leave the country, and second, that former and present members of foreign military and security services and their families would not be issued permits.

In April 1993 the HCNM issued his first formal recommendation, regarding which the government took almost no action from April to June, while on the Russian-speakers’ side, opposition increased to the draft legislation. Russian organizations in Estonia organized large demonstrations; called on the Russian government for assistance; and threatened to close down power plants, conduct sabotage, and take up arms.

The Russian government protested the draft law at the UN, and the Russian foreign ministry warned Estonia that it was headed for a dangerous confrontation that could have serious consequences for the whole Baltic region. Russia also tried (unsuccessfully) to prevent Estonia from joining the Council of Europe on the grounds that hundreds of thousands of people were deprived of citizenship and that Estonia’s conformity with European norms was an illusion.<sup>15</sup>

The Estonian parliament nevertheless passed the law on June 21, 1993, sparking a crisis involving the Estonian government, the Russian-speaking minority in Estonia, and the Russian government. Many noncitizens interpreted the law as an effort to force them to leave, and Russian organizations in Estonia claimed that the law provided the legal basis for mass deportations and called for civil disobedience. Russian President Yeltsin warned that all necessary measures would be taken to protect Russians in Estonia, and cut gas supplies to Estonia the following day, ostensibly because of unpaid bills. He also called the Estonian government’s actions “ethnic cleansing” and “an Estonian version of apartheid,” adding that the Estonian leadership had forgotten about “some geopolitical and demographic realities” about which Russia was able to remind them.<sup>16</sup>

---

<sup>14</sup> HCNM letter to Foreign Minister Jüri Luik, March 9, 1994.

<sup>15</sup> Andrew Marshall, “Russia Resists Estonia Joining Human Rights Body,” *Independent*, May 13, 1993.

<sup>16</sup> Justin Burke, “Charges Fly Between Russia, Estonia Over Citizenship Law,” *Christian Science Monitor*, June 29, 1993.

## Chapter 5. OSCE Principles and Estonia

On June 28 the town councils of Narva and Sillamäe voted to hold referenda on declaring their towns as autonomous regions. The Estonian government considered that the referenda would be illegal and a threat to Estonia's territorial integrity, fearing that any autonomous regions might try to join with Russia, a perception increased by statements by nationalists in Russia. The Estonian government discussed using force to stop the referenda, and the Russian parliament passed a resolution urging sanctions on Estonia including suspending troop withdrawals. The potential for Russian intervention increased, for the resolution stated that Estonia's actions could not be seen as a purely internal affair, and Yeltsin declared that Russia might have to intervene if interethnic relations worsened.

The president of Estonia, Lennart Meri, asked the OSCE for help, and the OSCE Committee of Senior Officials asked the HCNM to look into the situation (an unusual action), and for the Estonian government to take appropriate action in response to his recommendations. The HCNM undertook a period of intense "shuttle diplomacy" between the Estonian government and representatives of the Russian community, while maintaining informal contacts with Russian officials, the foreign minister in particular.

The HCNM's most immediate recommendation was for the Estonian president, who under the country's constitution was required to promulgate all laws before they would take effect, to defer his decision until the Council of Europe and OSCE had assessed the law in light of international standards. The president accepted the recommendation, and after receiving comments sent the law back to the parliament, which amended it. The EU welcomed the changes to the law but the Russian Foreign Ministry stated that the revised law maintained the discriminatory spirit of the earlier draft. On July 12 Meri promulgated the revised version, stating that it was now in line with European principles.

On the same day, the HCNM issued a statement that included assurances he had received from the Estonian government and Russian community representatives, which included a commitment from the government that it had no intention of beginning a process of expulsion, and a commitment from the Russian community that it would abide by the decision of the Estonian court regarding the legality of the referenda. The two towns did conduct the referenda, the Estonian Supreme Court declared them null and void, and the Russian community respected the decision. The crisis ended without violence, but the underlying problems had not been resolved and tensions remained.

Relations with Russia regarding interethnic tensions remained strained during this period, particularly as the Russian leadership came under increasing criticism from nationalists, hardliners, and communists regarding the status of the 25 million Russians in the former Soviet republics. This was a serious concern for the Russian government, but was also an issue that could be exploited by political leaders and groups as the December 1993 elections neared, an approach that contributed to the election of the leader of the ultra-nationalist Liberal Democratic Party of Russia (LDPR) Vladimir Zhirinovskiy.

Russian citizens living in Estonia were allowed to vote in Russian elections, and almost half of those who voted in the Russian December 1993 elections voted for the LDPR, a matter that increased tensions for Estonians.<sup>17</sup> The success of the LDPR so alarmed the Baltic States that their three leaders held an emergency summit to discuss the implications of the election.

---

<sup>17</sup> Keesing's, "Foreign Reaction," Dec. 1993.

## Chapter 5. OSCE Principles and Estonia

In 1994 nationalistic rhetoric increased in Russia (some analysts attributed this rhetoric to the perceived need to regain the initiative lost to the nationalists in the elections). In January 1994 Foreign Minister Andrei Kozyrev said that Russia should not withdraw from regions that had been in its sphere of interest for centuries, and that troops needed to stay in the Baltics because a complete withdrawal would create a security vacuum that would leave the Russians there undefended.<sup>18</sup> Zhirinovskiy called for economic measures to force the collapse of the Baltic States if they did not give full voting rights to the Russians.

In February 1994 one instance of violence was reported when unknown attackers destroyed a checkpoint at a Russian airbase near Tallinn. The Russian foreign ministry called the attack “an extremely dangerous provocation which could lead to unforeseeable consequences,” but Estonian officials denied that the attack had been sanctioned.<sup>19</sup>

Little was done to implement the HCNM’s recommendations, and tensions remained high over a number of issues, especially administrative problems in obtaining residence permits and passports. The government had seriously underestimated the time and resources required to process and issue 400,000 residence permits in one year, and the resulting delays, confusion, and long lines caused frustration and fear on the part of the Russians. Most alarming was that the application deadline was July 1994, and by early 1994 the full-scale application process had not yet started, and fears of expulsion increased. The HCNM learned of these fears during a February 1994 visit, and made a number of recommendations regarding residence permits: general recommendations such as making the application process “as simple and smooth as possible,” and others aimed at specific problems such as providing the application form in Russian. The HCNM also recommended that the government extend the deadline; however, in order to make sure that the Russian-speakers took the deadline seriously—for some Russian organizations planned a boycott campaign—the government did not announce the extension until a few weeks before the deadline, a delay that caused a great deal of anxiety for many Russians.

These fears were communicated to the Russian government, and relations between the two governments continued to be poor. In May 1994 Russian Defense Minister Pavel Grachev said that the withdrawal of Russian troops was “closely linked to guarantees of normal life for the so-called Russian-speaking population,” and added that it wouldn’t take long to send reinforcements.<sup>20</sup> In July Yeltsin announced further delays in the troop pullout due to the “crude violations of human rights.”<sup>21</sup> In August a poll of 615 Russian military officers listed Russia’s enemies, in order, as Latvia, Afghanistan, Lithuania, Estonia, and the United States.<sup>22</sup>

**1995.** In 1995 the Estonian government increased tensions by lengthening the residence requirement for naturalization and adding a constitution exam.<sup>23</sup> Russians in Estonia, and the Russian government, reacted sharply. The Russian foreign ministry said that the law was

---

<sup>18</sup> John Lloyd, “Russians to Stay in Baltics, Says Kozyrev,” *Financial Times*, Jan. 19, 1994.

<sup>19</sup> Keesing’s, “Clash at Airbase,” Feb. 1994. Also in February, the Estonian government initiated proceedings against Peter Rozhok, an LDPR representative in Estonia, for attempting to instigate ethnic enmity. Rozhok, describing Estonia as ancient Russian territory, had urged retired Russian troops in Estonia to organize paramilitary units.

<sup>20</sup> “Russia Rattles Sabres at Estonia,” *Independent*, May 7, 1994.

<sup>21</sup> John Aloysius Farrell, “Yeltsin Makes Concessions on Baltic Security,” *Boston Globe*, July 11, 1994.

<sup>22</sup> Bajarnas, *The Baltic States: Security and Defence After Independence*.

<sup>23</sup> The HCNM recommended that the Estonian government make the constitution exam “considerably easier,” believing that it was too difficult. In addition, some questions had questionable relevance, such as “name the regulation specifying the form of the state flag.” See Poleshchuk, *Advice Not Welcomed*, 61.

designed to legitimize discrimination against Estonia's Russian-speaking community, and Russia brought the matter up at the Council of the Baltic Sea States and the UN, actions that led to investigations by both organizations. In April Kozyrev criticized Estonia and Latvia for legislation designed to "push" Russians out, and stated that military force was among a large arsenal of means at Russia's disposal for protecting Russians in the "near abroad," and might be necessary in some cases. Later, though, he stressed that he had not threatened to use force against Estonia, and that force would only be used in very special situations.<sup>24</sup> In June the Narva Union of Russian Citizens demonstrated, and wrote an open letter to the Estonian parliament protesting against "the continuing mockery of citizens of Russia in Estonia" caused by Estonia's "strident national radicalism."<sup>25</sup>

As the December 1995 elections approached in Russia, candidates increased their rhetoric. Presidential candidate and Communist Party leader Gennady Zyuganov raised the specter of secession when he declared that the eastern expansion of NATO would mean the division of Estonia since the majority of the Russians in the northeast would vote for joining Russia. Communists and nationalists won a majority to the Duma (the lower house of the Russian parliament), and one-third of the Russian voters in Estonia voted for political parties with platforms that included reviving Russia's greatness or restoring the Soviet Union.<sup>26</sup>

**1996.** During 1996 the Estonian government still made little effort to integrate the noncitizens, and the HCNM, concerned about the resources needed to implement his recommendations, asked the other OSCE States to provide assistance for programs in language training and integration projects. The government set up a Language Training Center to coordinate this assistance and distribute funds to projects, and to develop a language strategy for teaching Estonian in schools and to adults.

In the meantime, administrative problems with residence permits continued, and Russian-speakers without permits again feared being expelled. Similar problems affected the issuing of alien passports, and by October, 96,000 people were still without passports—and to travel outside the country they had to apply for a travel document each time.<sup>27</sup> These issues caused frustration and resentment on the part of the noncitizens and increased their perception that they were not wanted, but the most serious consequence was that large numbers of noncitizens became Russian citizens through a simple registration procedure that they could do at any Russian embassy. Some registered because of residence permit problems, but about two-thirds so that they could visit relatives. As a result, statelessness was reduced, but the number of Russian citizens in Estonia increased, a situation that did not assist in developing loyalty and national cohesion.

The HCNM recommended that the government speed up the processing of residence permits and passports, but also intervened to help the situation. He coordinated with the Swiss government to provide funds for computer equipment for the processing, and the Council of Europe paid for the printing of a hundred thousand passports.

---

<sup>24</sup> Keesing's, "Foreign Relations," April 1995; Andrew Higgins, "Kremlin Backs War to Protect Ethnic Russians," *Independent*, April 19, 1995.

<sup>25</sup> Minorities at Risk, *Chronology for Russians in Estonia*.

<sup>26</sup> Matthew Kaminski, "Nationalist Surge Worries Neighbours," *Financial Times*, Dec. 20, 1995.

<sup>27</sup> Letter from HCNM to Foreign Minister Siim Kallas, Oct. 28, 1996.

## Chapter 5. OSCE Principles and Estonia

Relations between Estonia and Russia continued to be poor. In April the Estonian foreign minister increased tensions when he said in an international forum that Russia was planning to consume neighboring States.<sup>28</sup> Rhetoric increased again during the Russian 1996 election campaign. Zyuganov said that Estonia was a parasite on Russia, retired general Aleksandr Lebed said in nearly every speech that Estonia would have no future if NATO expanded there, and Zhirinovskiy threatened to erect giant fans along Russia's border to waft toxic nuclear fumes into the Baltic States.<sup>29</sup> Estonian President Lennart Meri said that it was important to separate electoral rhetoric from real political substance, but noted that there had been "a sharp increase in the level of hostility coming from Russian politicians towards the Baltic States and especially Estonia."<sup>30</sup> Of concern to many Estonians was that a large majority of the 25 million Russians in the former Soviet republics voted for Zyuganov, who supported reincorporating the Baltic States into Russia. Also of concern was that in March 1996 the Duma passed a nonbinding resolution reversing the dissolution of the Soviet Union.

**1997.** Beginning in 1997, the EU played an increasing role in Estonia, for membership was an extremely important foreign policy goal for the government. In 1993 the EU had published the criteria for membership, including that candidate countries had achieved stable institutions guaranteeing democracy, the rule of law, human rights and respect for and protection of minorities; a functioning market economy and the capacity to cope with the competitive pressures and market forces within the EU; and the ability to take on the obligations of membership, including adherence to the aims of political, economic, and monetary union.<sup>31</sup>

The EU declared that in the area of minorities it would be guided by the HCNM's recommendations, and therefore, in the spring of 1997 the Estonian foreign ministry prepared a document showing how Estonia had implemented all but two of the HCNM's recommendations, and presented this document to the members of the OSCE Permanent Council—which included representatives from all of the EU States. The intent was to show the EU members that Estonia had fulfilled the EU requirements regarding minorities, and therefore was eligible to start accession talks.

The HCNM did not reply directly to the Estonian government's assessment, but prepared a formal recommendation in May 1997. In this letter he assessed the overall interethnic situation in Estonia to be good, but wrote of a number of concerns regarding unimplemented recommendations, including stateless children, the slow process of naturalization, the high percentage of the population that remained stateless (14 percent), the issuing of alien passports, the lack of an ombudsman, the difficulty of the constitution exam, and the need for more language training. The HCNM believed that the government's integration efforts had been half-hearted despite the resources provided, and therefore recommended that the government speed up the preparation of the language training strategy, give it top priority, and include at least one Russian member with experience in the language training field in the working group drawing up the strategy.<sup>32</sup>

---

<sup>28</sup> "Estonia: Honoured Enemy," *Economist*, May 4, 1996.

<sup>29</sup> Michael Specter, "Estonians Cast a Wary Eye on Russian Election," *New York Times*, May 26, 1996.

<sup>30</sup> Adrian Bridge, "Estonia Seeks Shelter from Icy Eastern Wind," *Independent*, May 29, 1996.

<sup>31</sup> European Commission, *Agenda 2000*, 1997, n.p.

<sup>32</sup> Kemp, *Quiet Diplomacy in Action*, 147; HCNM letter to Foreign Minister Toomas Ilves, May 21, 1997.

## Chapter 5. OSCE Principles and Estonia

The EU issued its first report on Estonia as an applicant country in July 1997, and the report's overall assessment was that on the whole, the rights of the Russian-speaking minority were being respected, and that there were no major problems between Estonians and the Russian minority. However, the report reiterated the HCNM's recommendations and outlined a number of areas that needed improvement. The report criticized areas such as the lack of an ombudsman and the administrative difficulties regarding residence permits, but particularly emphasized the need to facilitate the integration of the Russian-speaking minority to include increased language training, and to reduce statelessness including that of children. The report noted the decreasing rate of naturalizations, and stated that if the rate continued, a large percentage of Estonia's population would remain foreign or stateless for a long time.<sup>33</sup>

The Estonian government took a number of actions in response. The government created a new post, a Minister for Inter-Ethnic Relations whose responsibilities included population and integration issues—the first time a government member was officially responsible for the integration process. The UN Development Program (UNDP) office in Tallinn convened a committee that worked out the aims and principles of the integration policy. The HCNM recognized positive aspects of the policy, writing that the integration strategy emphasized “the importance of Estonians and non-Estonians working together in the consolidation of the country's society; it points out that integration is a two-way process, with responsibilities on both sides; it explicitly rules out assimilation as a goal; and it places emphasis on youth.”<sup>34</sup>

The government established a new “state language teacher” post with incentives to teach in the Russian areas, with the goal of providing one or two teachers in each Russian-language school. The HCNM welcomed the decision, as did the OSCE and EU.

The government attached the ombudsman responsibility to an existing position, the office of the Legal Chancellor; however, the office was not independent as had been recommended, but was filled by a government official. Nevertheless, the office expanded to include satellite offices in the northeast, and use of the office increased significantly, generating positive comments from the EU and the HCNM.<sup>35</sup>

The Estonian government made progress on residence permits and passports, though by May 1997 there was still a backlog of 50,000 passports to be distributed. By the end of 1997 the government had largely completed the processing of both permits and passports, which finally ended fears of expulsion.

Reports of tensions between Estonia and Russia regarding interethnic relations were mixed in 1997, but on the whole diminished. In January Russian Foreign Minister Yevgeny Primakov said that Russia would not sign a 1996 border agreement with Estonia because of Estonia's lack of respect for the rights of Russian-speakers, and stated that Russia should impose economic sanctions on those countries that discriminated against ethnic Russians, in particular Estonia. However, in the same month, the Council of Europe's Parliamentary Assembly voted to close the monitoring procedure for Estonia, highlighting the country's progress in the field of human rights, though the Council noted some areas that still needed attention.<sup>36</sup> At the November 1997

---

<sup>33</sup> European Commission, *Agenda 2000*, 1997, n.p.

<sup>34</sup> OSCE Secretary General, *Annual Report 1998 on OSCE Activities*, 33.

<sup>35</sup> European Commission, *2002 Regular Report*, 27–28.

<sup>36</sup> “Assembly Gives Qualified Support to Estonia's Honouring of Commitments,” [www.coe.fr/cp/97/50a\(97\).htm](http://www.coe.fr/cp/97/50a(97).htm) (Sept. 28, 1999).



OSCE Implementation Meeting on Human Dimension Issues, Russian representatives voiced their concern for the Russian-speaking populations in the areas bordering Russia, the former republics, and the Baltic States in particular; however, the Russian attitude was evaluated as being more moderate than in the previous year's meeting.<sup>37</sup> In early December a delegation of Russian foreign ministry officials visited Estonia to investigate the human rights situation, and reported that the situation was not as bad as they had thought, with the main problem being continuing difficulties for ethnic Russians in obtaining citizenship.<sup>38</sup>

Shortly before the December 1997 EU summit—at which the decision would be made as to which countries would be invited to open negotiations for joining—the Estonian government announced its decision to address the issue of stateless children. Later that same month, the EU decided to include Estonia in the first group of countries to begin accession negotiations, a major foreign policy achievement for Estonia.

**1998.** The EU and the Estonian government signed the accession document in March 1998, an important step towards the achieving of security for Estonia, involving as it did some measure of physical and psychological protection by the EU. Also in March the government took a significant step towards developing a formal integration program by establishing an Integration Foundation to initiate and support projects aimed at the integration of Estonian society, and to coordinate the effective use of resources.

Significant shifts in attitude were reported as having taken place in Estonia during 1998. The government reported that in contrast to the early 1990s when most Estonians expected the Russians to leave, most Estonians accepted that the great majority of the Russians were going to stay, and a similar change occurred on the Russian side in accepting Estonia as an independent State. The Estonian government also recognized that continued alienation of the non-Estonians was a danger:

As a result of heavy migration during the Soviet occupation, a very sizeable and somewhat isolated Russian-speaking community has arisen in Estonia. Isolation of this community threatens both social stability and national security.<sup>39</sup>

However, progress was not constant: domestic opposition hindered the passing of legislation on stateless children, and the EU wrote in its 1998 report that it was regrettable that parliament had not adopted amendments that “would align it with OSCE recommendations and facilitate naturalization of stateless children.”<sup>40</sup> Other States and the OSCE echoed the message, and in December 1998 parliament passed the legislation. The HCNM issued a press release welcoming the law's adoption, the EU issued a statement acknowledging that Estonia had fulfilled the OSCE recommendations with regard to citizenship, and the Russian foreign ministry expressed satisfaction.<sup>41</sup>

**1999.** In 1999 the government adopted an integration action plan, half funded by the EU and half by the Estonian government, that included developing a methodology for teaching Estonian as a second language, teacher training, language training in vocational and higher education

---

<sup>37</sup> Pentikäinen, “The 1997 Implementation Meeting on Human Dimension Issues of the OSCE,” 22–23.

<sup>38</sup> John Finerty, “Russian Foreign Ministry on Estonia: ‘Situation Not as Bad as We Thought,’” *CSCE Digest* (Jan. 1997): 7.

<sup>39</sup> Estonian government, *The State Programme “Integration in Estonian Society 2000–2007,”* Executive Summary.

<sup>40</sup> European Commission, *Regular Report*, 1998, 10.

institutions, and teaching materials. The government increased Estonian language teaching in Russian secondary schools and to adults, and provided language-training programs on television and elsewhere.

The Integration Foundation also supported integration projects such as Estonian language camp and family exchanges. Language camps provided young people the opportunity to supplement their knowledge of Estonian outside of school. Family exchange projects provided the opportunity for children and youths to practice their Estonian by talking with Estonians of their own age; live with an Estonian family for a week to two months; and familiarize themselves with Estonians and Estonian culture, while at the same time sharing their own culture.

**2000.** In 2000 the government adopted the State Integration Programme 2000–2007. In this program, integration policy was expressed as the idea that the harmonization of society was a two-way process that involved the integration of Estonians and non-Estonians around a strong common core of the knowledge of the Estonian language and Estonian citizenship, while at the same time creating conditions for maintaining ethnic differences based on the recognition of minority cultural rights.

Problems still existed, however. In 1998 and 1999 parliament had passed laws requiring the use of Estonian in private businesses, and requiring parliamentary candidates to be able to speak Estonian. The issues were resolved, but under strong international pressure, particularly from the EU as shown in its 1999 report:

The concerns raised by the adoption of this law go beyond the non-compliance by Estonia of the political criteria for membership on minorities issues and could conflict between the law and the obligations of Estonia under the Europe Agreement.... The OSCE High Commissioner [on National] Minorities has also pointed out that the current text contradicts a number of international standards as regards freedom of expression, in particular those introduced by the European Convention on Human Rights, of which Estonia is a contracting party.... The adoption of the Language law, which restricts access of non-Estonian speakers in political and economic life constitutes a step backwards and should be amended. In the meantime, the Commission will closely monitor the implementation of the law to see what impact it will have in practice.<sup>42</sup>

The 2000 census showed progress in reducing statelessness and acquisition of citizenship, with the percentage of the population that was stateless decreasing from more than 33 percent in 1992 to about 12 percent in 2000, with the proportion of Estonian citizens highest among those under thirty-five and especially high for children under ten.<sup>43</sup> From 1992 to 2000, over 110,000 persons acquired Estonian citizenship.<sup>44</sup>

**2001.** The 2001 EU report recognized Estonia's progress "in further consolidating and deepening the stability of its institutions guaranteeing democracy, the rule of law, human rights and respect for and protection of minorities," but also noted that continued attention and resources were needed to implement all elements of the integration program, including the

---

<sup>41</sup> Zaagman, *Conflict Prevention in the Baltic States*, 43; Minorities at Risk, *Chronology for Russians in Estonia*.

<sup>42</sup> European Commission, *1999 Regular Report*, 15, 16.

<sup>43</sup> Estonian government, "Citizenship. 16 February 2006."

<sup>44</sup> *Ibid.*

naturalization process, language training, and awareness and involvement in the integration process across all sections of the Estonian population.<sup>45</sup>

During this period, Russian officials continued to criticize Estonia in fora such as the UN, and in December 2001 Russia opposed the ending of the OSCE Mission to Estonia, stating that the Mission had not completed its tasks and its closure was regrettable.<sup>46</sup> However, the overall situation appeared to improve: no criticisms or threats were reported in Keesing's Record of World Events or the Lexis-Nexis database, and in March 2002 the new HCNM, Rolf Ekéus, said that he did not see any major problems in Estonia and would focus his efforts on supporting social integration.<sup>47</sup>

### OSCE Principles, Implementation, and Effect on Security

From 1993 to 1999 the HCNM made thirteen formal recommendations in which he made overall and specific recommendations to the Estonian government; ethnic minorities in Estonia, particularly the Russian-speaking community; and other OSCE States (see Appendix F). All of the recommendations involved OSCE principles.

**Overall HCNM Recommendation.** The HCNM's first formal recommendation, issued in April 1993, contained his overall recommendations to the Estonian government and the Russian-speaking minority. The HCNM's overall recommendation to the government was to integrate the Russian minority by a deliberate policy of integration, particularly by facilitating the acquisition of Estonian citizenship, and assuring the minority of full equality with Estonian citizens. His overall recommendation to the Russian-speaking minority was to adapt to and develop loyalty towards Estonia as an independent State, and to contribute to their own integration, in particular by making a "determined effort" to learn enough Estonian to be able to conduct a simple conversation (except for those who had retired from work).

**OSCE Principles.** All of the HCNM's recommendations either referred to OSCE principles, or were related to them. Most of his specific recommendations involved Principles 10–15, dealing with the protection and promotion of rights and freedoms within States.

The HCNM's recommendations regarding general human rights were examples of references to Principle 10, that the government has the responsibility to create and maintain the conditions in which all individuals are able to fully exercise their rights. An example was his recommendation that the government use humanitarian considerations and reasonableness as the guiding principles regarding those who would neither qualify for citizenship nor have the status of permanent residents.

Principle 11 stated that the States would use democracy, the rule of law based on human rights, and the market economy as the means to ensure that all individuals are able to fully exercise their rights and freedoms. Those HCNM recommendations that aimed at clarifying legislation, and ensuring consistent interpretation and implementation, referred to the rule of law aspect of Principle 11.

---

<sup>45</sup> European Commission, *2001 Regular Report*, 23–24.

<sup>46</sup> Journal of the 373rd Plenary Meeting of the Permanent Council, Dec. 13, 2001, Annex.

<sup>47</sup> Sary, *Integration by Reframing Legislation*, 100.

## Chapter 5. OSCE Principles and Estonia

Principle 12 recognized that sometimes special measures are needed to ensure that minorities can exercise their equal rights, and the majority of the HCNM's recommendations referred to this principle. All of the HCNM's recommendations regarding mechanisms and institutions to ensure minority participation in government decisions pertained to this principle. The HCNM's recommendation that the government assist the non-Estonian population in acquiring citizenship was an example in that minorities cannot exercise their equal rights without participating in the political process.

The HCNM referred a number of times to Principle 13, which addressed the need to balance the interests of majorities and national minorities. One example was when he wrote in his first formal recommendation that the stated aim of the Estonian government was to find a formula for the problem of the non-Estonian population in accordance with the international standards subscribed to by Estonia. The HCNM continued the discussion of balance by addressing the "two completely contradictory options" that the government faced, the first being to provide a privileged position for the Estonian population, an option that he wrote would not be compatible with the spirit, if not the letter, of the international obligations that Estonia had accepted. The second option was to balance the interests of the two groups by aiming at integrating the non-Estonian population.

The HCNM also referred to Principle 13 when he discussed the Estonian and non-Estonian desire to maintain and develop their identities. He acknowledged the Estonians' determination to reestablish their national identity after its suppression during the Soviet era, but stressed that the Estonians could strengthen their political, cultural, and linguistic identity, and at the same time integrate the non-Estonians. In turn, he stated that non-Estonians could learn Estonian without sacrificing their cultural or linguistic identity.

The HCNM recommendations to the Russian-speaking community referred primarily to Principle 14, that minorities fulfill their responsibilities. As an example, he wrote in his April 1993 recommendation that he was aware that the policy he was advocating required an effort on the part of the government, and an equal contribution on the part of the non-Estonian population.

The issue of language use in public and private involved Principle 15 in that the majority and minority have linguistic rights that may sometimes conflict. As an example, minorities can use their language in their private businesses, but for public safety, emergency personnel need to be able to communicate with the individuals they serve.

The HCNM's recommendations dealing with giving and accepting help among countries referred to Principle 4, that the participating States accept their mutual involvement with, accountability to, and assistance to each other in matters pertaining to the implementation of their OSCE commitments. Examples were the assistance that other OSCE States gave to the Estonian government for language training and integration efforts. Principle 4 was also the basis for the help that the HCNM personally directed, such as arranging for the Foundation on Inter-ethnic Relations to publish brochures on the naturalization process, and arranging an international seminar on minority education.

On several occasions the HCNM referenced Principle 18, that individuals, groups, NGOs, and governments at all levels make good faith and continuous efforts to fully implement their OSCE commitments. One example was his statement that the Estonian government had repeatedly assured him of its determination to fully respect OSCE commitments, including those concerning minorities. A second example was when he wrote that the Russians in Estonia would adapt more

easily to Estonia as an independent State if Russia fulfilled its OSCE commitment to remove its troops. Table 5–1 summarizes the HCNM’s recommendations and the principles involved.

Table 5–1. Summary of HCNM Recommendations and OSCE Principles		
HCNM Recommendations		
↓	↓	↓
Estonian Government	Russian-speaking Community	Other OSCE States
↓	↓	↓
<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Assist noncitizens to acquire citizenship</li> <li>2. Assure minorities of full equality</li> </ol>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Develop loyalty to Estonia as an independent State</li> <li>2. Contribute to own integration, particularly by learning a basic level of Estonian</li> </ol>	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Remove all Russian troops per OSCE commitment</li> <li>2. Provide assistance to the Estonian government for language training and integration</li> <li>3. Recognize the Estonian Aliens Passport as a legal travel document</li> </ol>
Principles 10–15, 18	Principles 14, 18	Principles 4, 18

**Implementation.** The government implemented nearly all of the HCNM’s recommendations, but often only after a significant delay, sometimes of several years. In some areas, however, the government went beyond the HCNM’s recommendations in facilitating integration and the acquisition of citizenship. In 2000 the government began to allow students who achieved a certain level on school language and civics exams to use these tests to fulfill the language and constitution exam requirements for citizenship. Estonia also gave noncitizens the right to vote in local elections, which the EU noted was a right that few countries in Europe allowed, and that contributed effectively towards the integration of noncitizens and the protection of their rights.<sup>48</sup>

The HCNM’s recommendations to the Russian minority were to adapt to Estonia as an independent State; develop a sense of loyalty towards Estonia; and contribute to their own integration, in particular by learning Estonian. The majority of the Russian-speakers, particularly younger people, tried to implement these recommendations. In a 1996 survey, over half of those without citizenship said that they had tried to improve their knowledge of Estonian since independence, and two-thirds of individuals aged 18–29 said they had tried.<sup>49</sup> The 2000 population census showed that 94 percent of persons fifteen and older used the Estonian language as either their mother tongue or as a second language, including two-thirds of Estonian citizens of Russian ethnicity. The attitude towards the language requirement for citizenship also changed. In a February 1993 survey, most of the respondents in the predominately Russian-speaking town of Narva disagreed with the citizenship requirement of Estonian language knowledge; however, three years later, well over 90 percent of all Russian-speakers in Estonia agreed or strongly agreed that their children ought to learn Estonian.<sup>50</sup>

<sup>48</sup> European Commission, *Agenda 2000*, 1997, n.p.

<sup>49</sup> HCNM letter to Foreign Minister Toomas Ilves, May 21, 1997.

<sup>50</sup> Smith, *The Baltic States*, 195; HCNM letter to Foreign Minister Toomas Ilves, May 21, 1997.

The HCNM made three specific recommendations to other OSCE States. One was to the kinstate, Russia, to fulfill her OSCE commitment to remove her troops, which was done in 1994. The HCNM made one recommendation to other OSCE States to provide significant assistance to the government for language training and integration, and recognize the Estonian Alien Passport as a legal travel document. Only some OSCE States recognized the passport as a legal travel document; however, a number of States and international organizations did provide significant assistance to the Estonian government for language training and integration.<sup>51</sup>

**Observed Effects on Security.** The primary effects on security regarding the implementation or non-implementation of the OSCE principles contained in the HCNM's recommendations were seen in the levels of tensions within Estonia, between the Estonian and Russian governments regarding specific issues, and in the region.

**Tensions within Estonia.** When the HCNM's recommendations were not implemented, as was generally the case from 1993 to 1996, tensions remained high within Estonia, and between Estonia and Russia regarding the issues referenced in the HCNM's recommendations. However, in 1997, when the Estonian government began to implement a number of the HCNM's recommendations, especially those involving acute anxieties such as residence permits (which affected whether or not people would be allowed to live in Estonia), tensions began to diminish. In 1998 the government (and the Russian minority) began to seriously implement the HCNM recommendations, including his overall recommendation to each, and tensions diminished as indicated by poll results showing better interethnic relations, and the increased acquisition of Estonian citizenship, particularly among young people. However, in 1998 and 1999, tensions increased when the Estonian parliament passed laws not in keeping with OSCE principles and other international standards, but decreased when these laws were revised. From 2000 to 2001 statelessness continued to be reduced, and tensions with Russia remained at a lower level. In 2001 the new HCNM stated that he believed he only needed to monitor interethnic relations.

**Tensions between Estonia and Russia.** Implementation of the OSCE principles in the HCNM's recommendations reduced tensions between the Estonian and Russian governments regarding issues pertaining to the Russian minority in Estonia, though criticisms continued. Indications of reduced tensions included the absence of threats, and the overall lowered tone of statements by the Russian government.

**Regional tensions.** Evidence of reduced tensions in the region included the closure of the OSCE Mission to Estonia based on the perception of the decreased likelihood of conflict. The HCNM issued no further formal recommendations, and no situations involving interethnic tensions arose that required the attention of the OSCE leadership.<sup>52</sup>

**Summary.** The implementation of the OSCE principles contained in the HCNM's recommendations had a significant effect on security by reducing tensions within Estonia, between Estonia and Russia, and in the region. Though some Russian citizens in Estonia and Russia did not become fully reconciled to Estonian independence, and tensions concerning language and minority education were not completely resolved, overall security was increased.

\*\*\*

---

<sup>51</sup> Sary, *Integration by Reframing Legislation*, 87. The donors included international organizations, NGOs, and individual countries. From 1998 to 2003, the EU provided over €4.5 million for language training, integration projects, and increasing employment opportunities.

<sup>52</sup> As of the time of the completion of this study in 2007.

## Chapter 6. Case Study 3: OSCE Principles and Macedonia

### Background of Macedonia

In 1991 Macedonia was a small, landlocked country in southeastern Europe (about 25,000 square kilometers and 2 million people), sharing borders with Greece, Bulgaria, Serbia, and Albania. Before the twentieth century Macedonia had comprised a much larger area, but had

been partitioned in 1913 among Greece (51 percent), Serbia (39 percent), Bulgaria (9 percent), and Albania (1 percent).<sup>1</sup> After World War II, the Serbian part became one of the six constituent republics of Yugoslavia (Bosnia and Herzegovina, Croatia, Macedonia, Montenegro, Serbia, and Slovenia). In 1991, during the period of great change that took place in the Soviet Union and Eastern Europe at the end of the Cold War from 1989 to 1991, Macedonia declared its independence after a referendum in which more than two-thirds of the eligible voters voted in favor of independence.<sup>2</sup> Macedonia was the only Yugoslav republic that seceded without armed conflict, and at the time, war was already being waged in Croatia, and conflict was to break out in Bosnia in 1992.



The new government faced serious challenges that included lack of international recognition as a State; the need to preserve independence, avoid war, and increase the State's defense capability; serious economic challenges, and high interethnic tensions. Because of Greek opposition, Macedonia experienced great difficulty in achieving general international recognition, and membership in international organizations such as the UN and the OSCE. Greece strongly objected to the use of the name "Macedonia," believing that the inhabitants did not have any links to the Macedonians of classical Greece, and that the use of the name and Hellenic symbols were usurping Greek heritage (as an example, Macedonia used the Star of Vergina from the tomb of King Philip of Macedon as its national symbol and on its flag). Greece also feared that the use of the name "Macedonia" might support a territorial claim in northern Greece, which contained a province also called "Macedonia," and in which a significant number of ethnic Macedonians lived.

Macedonia's national security was problematic: Serbia had withdrawn almost all of the Yugoslav Army and equipment, leaving Macedonia without an adequate defense capability in the event of a feared Serbian attack, or to monitor its long, mountainous, and poorly marked borders. A particular fear was that the ongoing conflict in Bosnia-Herzegovina would spill over and embroil Macedonia in a broader Balkan war. The international community was also concerned with this possibility, and in the fall of 1992, established the United Nations Preventive Deployment Force (UNPREDEP) of peacekeepers to Macedonia's borders with Albania and Serbia—the first time the UN had deployed forces to a region before the outbreak of any fighting. The OSCE established a Mission in Macedonia to monitor developments along the borders with Serbia and other areas that could be affected by the spillover of the conflict in the

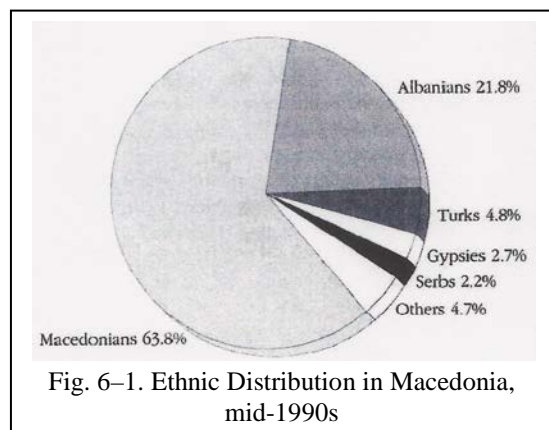
<sup>1</sup> Williams, *Preventing War*, 20.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*, 23.

former Yugoslavia; to promote respect for Macedonia's territorial integrity and the maintenance of peace, stability, and security; and to help prevent possible conflict in the region.<sup>3</sup>

Macedonia's economic challenges included managing the transition from a command economy to a market economy, high inflation, and significant unemployment. These challenges were exacerbated by the loss of financial support from the central Yugoslav government, and the effects of UN-imposed sanctions against Serbia during the Bosnian war, which caused Macedonia to lose its major trading partner and only direct overland route to Western Europe. The lack of international recognition prevented Macedonia from applying for foreign loans and capital, though organizations such as the International Monetary Fund (IMF) informally recognized Macedonia in order to provide aid.

There were significant interethnic tensions within the country. At the time of independence, Macedonia's population consisted of about two-thirds ethnic Slav Macedonians; less than one-quarter ethnic Albanians; and about one-tenth other minorities (Fig. 6-1), and the primary tensions were between the Macedonian and Albanian communities.<sup>4</sup> During the Yugoslav era, the two communities had coexisted peacefully, but with little contact and mutual suspicion, a situation that continued after independence.



The Albanian minority had significant tensions involving a number of areas. In particular the Albanian community believed that they were treated as second-class citizens, pointing to their low education level and poor representation in public service positions, and believed that they should have an equal status with the Macedonian majority. This belief was reflected in a number of demands, such as the recognition of Albanian as a second official language.

A major Albanian concern was better education at all levels for their children. Macedonia's constitution guaranteed primary and secondary education for minorities in their own language; however, Albanian education was generally poorer, and in 1993, less than one-third of Albanian students attended high school (a significantly lower rate than that of ethnic Macedonians), and even fewer went on to college.<sup>5</sup> A major—and contentious—demand was for a State-funded Albanian-language university.<sup>6</sup>

On the Macedonian side, a great concern was the possibility of secession: the Albanians were primarily concentrated in the western part of the country along the borders of Albania and the Serbian province of Kosovo, and Macedonians feared that the Albanians' ultimate objective was to be part of a pan-Albanian State consisting of Albania, Kosovo, and parts of Macedonia.

<sup>3</sup> *Survey of OSCE Long-Term Missions and Other OSCE Field Activities*, 2000, 1-2. Other tasks included dialogue with the government; contacts with representatives of political parties, organizations, and ordinary citizens; trips to assess the level of stability and the possibility of conflict and unrest; and in case of incidents, assistance in establishing the facts.

<sup>4</sup> Simonsen, *Conflicts in the OSCE Area*, 29.

<sup>5</sup> HCNM letter to Foreign Minister Stevo Crvenkovski, Nov. 16, 1994.

<sup>6</sup> In the former Yugoslavia, Albanians in Macedonia had attended the University of Pristina in Kosovo (the only institution of higher education in Yugoslavia with courses taught in Albanian); however, in 1991 the Serbian authorities had ended these courses, leaving the Albanians with no access to Albanian-language higher education.



Macedonians were also alarmed by the increasing Albanian population from the higher Albanian birth rate and immigration from Kosovo, and feared becoming the minority (see Fig. 6–2).<sup>7</sup> A number of Macedonians suspected the Albanian community of not respecting the nation’s laws, and of disloyalty to the new State. For example, many of Macedonia’s Albanians boycotted the September 1991 referendum concerning independence, and in January 1992 had held their own unofficial referendum in which a large majority voted in favor of territorial and political autonomy within Macedonia—a referendum that the government rejected, and that many Macedonians interpreted as the first step towards secession. Macedonians also tended to view Albanians as a minority that should not be granted greater rights than those of other minorities. In addition, the government feared internal instability or even the break-up of the country if Albanian demands were met—for other minorities in Macedonia often complained that Albanians received disproportionate attention and benefits.



### The HCNM’s Intervention and Recommendations

**1993–1995.** In February 1993 Greece accepted international arbitration over the issue of Macedonia’s name, after which Macedonia was admitted to the UN under the provisional name of “The former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia,” but without a flag pending arbitration regarding Greek objections to the Star of Vergina on the flag. Macedonia was then admitted to the OSCE in April, but only with observer status, and the HCNM made his first visit in June. He made a second visit in October, after which he issued his first formal recommendation on November 1, 1993. His initial specific recommendations dealt with the issues of minority education, mechanisms for dialogue, minority representation in public service, and a census.

In the area of education, the HCNM recommended that the government ensure that an adequate number of Albanian teachers receive proper training for teaching in elementary schools, and promote greater access to high school for Albanian students. During the 1993–1995 period, the government did not implement the recommendation concerning teacher training, but did establish quotas for minority students to attend high school, and thereby increased the number of students going on to secondary education.

He recommended that the government strengthen the Council for Inter-Ethnic Relations in ways that could improve its ability to promote interethnic harmony, ways such as by being able

<sup>7</sup> Simonsen, *Conflicts in the OSCE Area*, 29. Note that after Serbia deprived Kosovo of the status of an autonomous province in 1989, a steady influx of Kosovar Albanians into Macedonia occurred as the Serbian regime became increasingly repressive. In addition, during the Yugoslav era, internal mobility had been unrestricted, and a great deal of movement, and intermarriages, had occurred between Albanian communities in Macedonia and Kosovo.

to initiate investigations of events that had led to interethnic tensions, and also that the government provide the Council with an adequate staff to perform these additional responsibilities. These recommendations, however, were not implemented.

The HCNM recommended that the government ensure, through the progressive process that was already underway, that the staffing of all government departments adequately reflect minorities.<sup>8</sup> The government made efforts to implement this recommendation, but progress was slow: for example, though the government set quotas for minority police training, attrition reduced the potential increase in staffing.<sup>9</sup>

The Albanian community believed that their numbers were underrepresented in the population figures, and therefore the HCNM recommended that the government resubmit a draft law on a census to parliament (the Sobranie).<sup>10</sup> The government held a census in 1994 with support from the EU and Council of Europe; however, some members of the Albanian community boycotted the census and protested the results.<sup>11</sup>

During this period, another challenge arose: in February 1994 Greece imposed a trade embargo on Macedonia over the dispute regarding the country's name and other issues. This action had serious economic consequences, which the Macedonian government estimated cost the economy about \$60 million per month.<sup>12</sup>

The HCNM visited Macedonia again in November 1994, after which he issued his second formal recommendation. In this recommendation he made a number of new specific recommendations and reiterated previous ones.

He recommended that the government reduce the residency requirement for citizenship from fifteen to five years (the requirement used in many OSCE States). The government did not implement this recommendation, with the negative effects often associated with statelessness such as resentment and the hampering of the development of loyalty to the State.<sup>13</sup>

The HCNM recommended that the government resubmit an earlier draft law on local self-government to the newly elected parliament, and emphasized the importance of particular articles pertaining to the official use of the languages and alphabets of the country's ethnic groups. The parliament did pass a law on local self-government in 1995 that allowed official use of minority languages in "units of local self-government" when a minority comprised at least 20 percent of the population.<sup>14</sup>

He recommended that TV broadcasts in the Albanian language be increased from one to two hours per day, with further subsequent increases. The government implemented this

---

<sup>8</sup> The HCNM also recommended that the government prepare annual progress reports in this area, and that the Council for Inter-Ethnic Relations review them. This recommendation was also not implemented.

<sup>9</sup> From 1993 to 2000, the Albanian police force membership increased from less than 5 percent to nearly 9 percent. See HCNM letter to Stevo Crvenkovski, Nov. 16, 1994; U.S. State Department, *Macedonia, The Former Yugoslav Republic of, Country Reports on Human Rights Practices 2001*.

<sup>10</sup> The resulting figure of 23 percent Albanians was disputed by ethnic Albanians; however, international observers rejected their objections. See Shea, *Macedonia and Greece*, 239.

<sup>11</sup> Keesing's, "Albania Boycott of Census," July 1994, and "Results of Controversial Census," Nov. 1994.

<sup>12</sup> HCNM letter to Foreign Minister Stevo Crvenkovski, Nov. 16, 1994.

<sup>13</sup> The EU also noted the problem of stateless persons. See European Commission, *Former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia Stabilisation and Association Report*, 2002, 10.

<sup>14</sup> The implementation sometimes needed improvement, for in 1998 the HCNM addressed implementing the "spirit" of the law as well as specifics such as the transfer of resources.

recommendation, increasing Albanian programming to three hours per day and five hours on Wednesdays.<sup>15</sup>

The HCNM recommended that other OSCE States and the international community offer enough assistance to enable Macedonia to start a process of economic recovery, noting that economic conditions in Macedonia had continued to deteriorate. The States and international organizations did provide aid; however, GDP continued to decrease, hampered by Greece's embargo and the sanctions on Serbia.

He also recommended that the Macedonian and Greek governments normalize their relations, to include ending the Greek embargo. This recommendation was partially implemented in October 1995 when Greece and Macedonia signed an interim accord that normalized their relations and settled all of the disputed issues except for the country's name. The agreement also opened the way to international recognition and membership in international organizations (however, the Accord stated that Greece would not object to Macedonia joining any international, multilateral, or regional organization of which Greece was a member unless Macedonia was to be referred to in any other way than "The former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia"). Trade between the two countries increased, and Greece eventually became the primary investor in Macedonia.

A new recommendation was for the Macedonian government to maintain the country's stability, and the HCNM outlined two areas that he saw as threats to this stability. The first was a possible deterioration of the economic situation, which he wrote could lead to social tensions, and the second was interethnic tensions, which in early 1995 did result in a crisis over the issue of an Albanian-language university.

In December 1994 the government decided that a request to initiate an Albanian-language university was not in accordance with the constitution and the education law, and when the self-styled "Tetovo University" attempted to open despite this ruling, the police forcibly closed the university. The HCNM immediately went to Macedonia and urged the government to accommodate Albanian aspirations for a university, but also urged the self-appointed rector of Tetovo University to use legal ways to achieve his aims. The HCNM repeatedly pointed out to both sides that OSCE commitments and other international standards recognized the right of persons belonging to national minorities to establish their own educational institutions, but that this right had to be exercised in accordance with national legislation.

Nevertheless, the issue became increasingly divisive and a second attempt to open the university resulted in clashes in which one Albanian was killed and about twenty people, including policemen, were injured. The HCNM again flew to Macedonia to defuse the situation. After meeting with Macedonian President Kiro Gligorov, the HCNM made a public statement on February 20, 1995, in which he called for calm and dialogue, and emphasized the importance of respecting both law and OSCE commitments:

I am strongly convinced that this is a time for restraint and for all the parties to remain calm. It is in the common interest of everyone in this country to live together in harmony. Incidents like that of [February 17] can only disturb this harmony. I am also deeply convinced that, if there is a further escalation of tensions, the interests of all ethnic groups will be further damaged. Now is the time not for mass demonstrations but for dialogue.

---

<sup>15</sup> International Crisis Group, *The Albanian Question in Macedonia*, 9.

## Chapter 6. OSCE Principles and Macedonia

Dialogue is the way of searching for common solutions. The question of the university is uppermost in this regard. In my opinion, this issue should be discussed within the framework of preparing the new law on higher education. It cannot be enforced by illegal actions. I consider it very important that your President has reiterated his firm intention to live up to the commitments contained in the OSCE documents, including those relating to persons belonging to national minorities. On this basis, it has to be possible to find solutions to the problems your country faces.<sup>16</sup>

The HCNM then met with members of the government and Albanian leaders, and discussed ways of stabilizing the situation; continuing the dialogue between the government and the Albanian community; and promoting solutions that would, within the framework of national laws, meet the legitimate demands of the Albanian community.

Tensions eased, though a large number of Macedonian students demonstrated against an Albanian-language university. The HCNM visited Macedonia again in March, and consulted with all concerned. After considering the problem, the HCNM believed that creating a new state university would probably require a change in the constitution, and therefore considered that a new private university could be a compromise. Therefore, on April 28, 1995, he issued his third formal recommendation, in which he focused on the issue of Albanian-language higher education.

He began by establishing the overall framework in which he believed the solution should be sought, which was through dialogue while a draft law on higher education was being prepared, and with full respect for Macedonia's constitutional order. He emphasized the need for a compromise formula, saying that any steps towards creating a new institution must conform with OSCE principles, respond to specific educational needs, contribute to interethnic harmony, and benefit all groups in the country.

In this recommendation, the HCNM proposed that the government create a Higher Education Center for Public Administration and Business as a private institution that would work in close cooperation with Skopje and Bitola universities. He emphasized the need for attention to languages, such as that the Center would contain a language training center and that lectures would be in Macedonian, Albanian, and English. He also noted that the curriculum would have to be approved by the government, and recommended that the government ask for international assistance for the Center's financing.

He pointed out that the Macedonian constitution, and OSCE standards, allowed the formation of a private university, but emphasized that both documents stressed that educational institutions had to conform with national laws. He addressed how the Center could benefit Macedonia in that the high-level training could result in the expansion of small- and medium-sized businesses that would help the economy; increase the country's international focus in higher education (which was needed); and that education in public administration and business would help increase the number of Albanians in public service. However, little action was taken on this recommendation.

**1996–1997.** In 1996 the HCNM focused on interethnic relations and the Albanian-language university in Tetovo, visiting Macedonia several times and meeting with representatives of the government and the Albanian minority. In his visits he stressed the need for dialogue and constructive solutions to problems, and in December chaired a roundtable on building

---

<sup>16</sup> "High Commissioner on National Minorities," *OSCE ODIHR Bulletin*, Winter 1994/1995, 55–56.

harmonious interethnic relations in Macedonia, bringing together representatives of parliament, the government, Albanian political parties, the academic community, and local NGOs. The participants discussed interethnic issues facing the country, three in particular: the role of local self-government in a multiethnic society, minority participation in public affairs, and minority education as a means of preserving ethnic identity while strengthening the integration and cohesion of society as a whole.

In early 1997 parliament passed a law allowing Albanian-language instruction at Skopje University for Albanian teachers of kindergarten and grades 1–4. The HCNM acknowledged this as a positive step; however, noted that the problem of the quality of teaching in grades 5–8 and secondary schools remained compelling, and urged further government action. He pointed out that improving education at these levels could stimulate the social and economic level of the Albanian population, increase the number of students starting and completing higher education, and remove a major barrier preventing the gradual appointment of ethnic Albanians to leading positions.

However, the law provoked verbal attacks from Macedonian nationalists and daily demonstrations by students and professors. These protests escalated into sporadic violence against Albanians including a violent confrontation after a soccer match; however, the Albanian political leadership restrained the Albanian community from responding in ways that might have escalated the situation. Interethnic tensions nevertheless increased and became further polarized when elections resulted in the success of a more radical Albanian party, and Macedonian attitudes hardened against any further concessions to the Albanians.

In July tensions erupted over the issue of the flying of the flags of other countries. Members of the more radical Albanian party were elected as mayors of the towns of Tetovo and Gostivar, and began flying the Albanian flag next to the Macedonian flag in front of the town halls. Macedonia's constitution guaranteed minorities the right of self-expression to include the use of symbols such as flags, but also prohibited the flying of the flags of foreign States.<sup>17</sup> A legal protest resulted in a Constitutional Court ruling to remove the flags, but neither mayor complied. The government decided not to take immediate action, but to prepare a new draft flag law as a compromise: Albanian flags would be allowed during sport and cultural events, and, in municipalities where an ethnic minority was the majority, kinstate flags could be flown next to the Macedonian flag on official state holidays.

Parliament (which included Albanian representatives), passed the new law, but the two mayors continued to fly the Albanian flag, and in the early morning of July 9, 1997, the police took the flags down. Later that day there were disturbances in Tetovo, and in Gostivar a demonstration turned into clashes during which 3 people were killed and over 200 injured, including a number of police. Both mayors were charged with failing to implement the Constitutional Court ruling. The mayor of Gostivar was also charged with organizing resistance, and with instigating national, racial, and religious hatred, discord, and intolerance.

The HCNM flew to Macedonia the next day and met extensively with members of the government and the Albanian community. After these meetings, the HCNM issued a statement in

---

<sup>17</sup> During the Yugoslav era, minorities were allowed to fly kinstate flags to which a red five-pointed star had been added. This star was removed after Macedonia's independence, which meant that the towns were flying Albania's flag. See International Crisis Group, *Macedonia Report*, 1997, 13.

which he said that in his view, it was more important than ever for all groups to strive to find solutions for interethnic problems by rejecting ethnic hatred and intolerance and by seeking constructive and continuous dialogue, with equal rights for all ethnic groups as the guiding principle. The statement said that in order to be successful, this dialogue had to be based on internationally accepted norms and standards, but equally on respect for the sovereignty and territorial integrity of the State, the constitutional order, and the rule of law.

Tensions eased somewhat, and the HCNM continued to visit Macedonia, emphasizing how important it was for all groups to promote constructive dialogue, tolerance, and respect, and stressing that this dialogue would yield productive results only when conducted in the context of respect for the constitution and the rule of law. He took direct actions as well: in November 1997 he held consultations in The Hague with Albanian leaders, and through the Foundation on Inter-Ethnic Relations initiated a Transition Year Program project to help Albanian high school students improve their university entrance examination scores.<sup>18</sup>

**1998.** The HCNM issued his fifth formal recommendation on November 6, 1998, after the parliamentary elections but before the new government was formed. This recommendation, issued in the form of a press release, was a comprehensive statement on a number of interethnic issues, and can be expressed as follows:

That the parties engage in a serious, constructive, and continuous dialogue regarding the steps that can be taken to accommodate the specific desiderata of minorities and find solutions acceptable to both sides regarding interethnic questions, and use a specific framework for this dialogue.

This dialogue, the HCNM wrote, must be based:

- Equally on internationally accepted norms and standards, and respect for the sovereignty and territorial integrity of the State as well as respect for the rule of law and the constitutional order, including that it can only be changed in accordance with constitutional rules;
- On the recognition, that as all groups pursue their specific interests, they also have common interests, such as the maintenance of peace and stability, the promotion of economic development, and the reduction of unemployment;
- On the guiding principles of equal rights for all ethnic groups, and the rejection of ethnic hatred and intolerance;
- On recognition that the government and the majority avoid considering any concession to a minority as a weakening of the State, and recognize that meeting the wishes of a minority, within the constitutional framework of a unitary State, may strengthen the State;
- On recognition that the essence of democracy is compromise in that both sides have to modify some of their positions, and that in a democratic multiethnic State a minority cannot impose a dictate on a majority, but neither can a majority afford to ignore the desiderata of a minority;
- On recognition that disregard of these basic rules will inevitably lead to destabilization of the State, and very possibly to violence, from which all concerned would suffer and no one would gain, whereas success would provide a firm basis for the stability of the country in the future.

---

<sup>18</sup> The program was successful, despite opposition from some ethnic Albanians that the program detracted from the issue of a separate Albanian-language university. See Kemp, *Quiet Diplomacy in Action*, 190.

The HCNM accompanied these general principles with more specific recommendations, and reiterated previous recommendations regarding education, minority participation in public affairs, local self-government, teacher training, and Albanian-language higher education. He also recommended that the other OSCE States provide international assistance to enable students of Macedonian and Albanian ethnicity to study, in common, new subjects like civic education and human rights, and to fund projects aimed at promoting the integration process such as summer camps and courses for students of different ethnicity.

**1999–2000.** The new government was receptive to the recommendations; however, in the spring of 1999, fighting and “ethnic cleansing” in Kosovo caused more than 250,000 Kosovar Albanians to seek refuge in Macedonia. This influx increased the population of Macedonia by more than 10 percent in a few weeks; significantly changed the interethnic balance; and exhausted the resources of the government, leaving no funds to pay government salaries, unemployment benefits, and pensions. Interethnic tensions in Macedonia increased, particularly as the Kosovo Liberation Army (KLA)—the force fighting Serbs in Kosovo—ran recruitment videos on Albanian television stations in Macedonia, increasing fears that the KLA would turn its attention to Macedonia.

As the refugee burden on Macedonia grew, the HCNM became so concerned that he gave a formal early warning to the OSCE Permanent Council, after which he issued a press release on the situation on May 12, 1999.<sup>19</sup> In this release, the HCNM made two specific recommendations: that the Macedonian government and all political parties do their utmost to maintain the stability of the country during the crisis, and that the OSCE States increase their efforts to help Macedonia avoid destabilization from the influx of refugees from Kosovo. These recommendations were implemented, for the international community did provide support, and stability in the country was maintained. States gave bilateral aid and held an international donor’s conference; in addition, international organizations such as the IMF and the UN gave assistance (the UN, which did not normally compensate host countries for refugee support, made an exception for Macedonia).

When the Kosovo crisis ended almost all of the refugees returned to Kosovo, and during his next visit, the HCNM noted a more constructive atmosphere regarding the issue of an Albanian-language university. He visited Macedonia several more times, and in February 2000 brought international education experts to discuss issues such as funding, subjects to be taught, and the legal status of the proposed institution. In April he presented a proposal for a private Institute of Higher Education that would consist of two sections: teacher training, and business management and public administration. However, the draft law on higher education required all instruction to be in Macedonian or “world languages,” and the HCNM and experts assisted in the preparation of a new law that would allow for the use of other languages in private institutions of higher education. The new law, despite strong opposition from extremists on both sides, was passed on July 25, 2000.

To implement the plan, the HCNM held a series of meetings with international experts, Macedonian experts, and ethnic Albanian representatives, and by October 2000 a business plan for the new university had been completed and presented. An international foundation was

---

<sup>19</sup> An early warning meant that the High Commissioner had concluded that there was a *prima facie* risk of potential conflict (in essence, that the HCNM did not believe he could contain a situation with the tools available to him).

established to oversee funding, legal issues, and implementation, and the European countries, the EU, Soros Foundation, and United States contributed more than 90 percent of the funds needed (the United States contributed about half).

**2001.** The groundbreaking ceremony for South East European (SEE) University took place in Tetovo on February 11, 2001. However, as the date approached, a serious crisis had been brewing. In January 2001, an organization calling itself the National Liberation Army (NLA) attacked the police station of a Macedonian village, killing one policeman and wounding three others. The NLA then issued a “communiqué” threatening the government and moderate Macedonian Albanians:

On 22 January a special unit of the National Liberation Army supported by a group of observers with automatic guns and hand grenade launchers attacked a Macedonian police station.... The attack was limited and was a warning to the Macedonian occupiers and their Albanophone collaborators. The uniforms of the Macedonian occupiers will continue to be attacked until the Albanian people are liberated. The policemen are called upon to return to their families and not sacrifice their lives in vain for the illusory Macedonian plans to dominate the Albanian majority.<sup>20</sup>

The NLA had ties to the KLA, and included ethnic Albanians from Macedonia who had either fought with the KLA or took up arms to fight with the NLA, and in February carried out armed assaults in Macedonia, seizing territory and attacking government forces.<sup>21</sup> The NLA claimed to be fighting for greater rights for Albanians; however, the insurgency was analyzed as a deliberate attempt to destabilize Macedonia in order to pursue Albanian independence in Kosovo and the western area of Macedonia, and to preserve smuggling rings and other criminal activities.<sup>22</sup>

***Independence in Kosovo and the western area of Macedonia.*** Analysts speculated that the international community’s support of the Serbian leadership after the Kosovo crisis might have discouraged some Kosovar Albanians’ hopes for independence. The KLA, therefore, may have wanted to capitalize on Albanian frustrations in Macedonia and open a new front by provoking an overreaction by the Macedonian government, which would in turn elicit Western sympathy and support, and spark a conflict between the government and the Albanian community.<sup>23</sup> There was speculation that the NLA sought to manipulate the NATO countries into supporting the Albanians as had happened during the Kosovo crisis: the BBC’s Balkans correspondent reported that the NLA was anxious to know how NATO would react to the campaign, and would be greatly disappointed by NATO’s response.<sup>24</sup>

The attacks occurred as Macedonia and the EU were preparing to sign a Stabilization and Association Agreement (a significant step towards membership in the EU), and as the date for the SEE University groundbreaking approached. Both events were expected to increase stability

---

<sup>20</sup> International Crisis Group, *The Macedonian Question*, 3.

<sup>21</sup> The NLA reportedly received logistical and financial support from inside Kosovo, and funds collected from abroad. See Keesing’s, “Serious Clashes with Ethnic Albanian Guerillas,” March 2001; Kim, *Macedonia: Country Background and Recent Conflict*, Nov. 7, 2001, 1–2.

<sup>22</sup> Two other possible contributing factors were a contested Serbia-Macedonia border demarcation, and frustration with the pace of reform in Macedonia.

<sup>23</sup> In addition, statements in 2001 from the new George W. Bush administration that the United States might reduce its involvement in the Balkans, may have influenced Albanian separatists to believe that the time for independence was propitious. See Gallagher, *The Balkans in the New Millennium*, 97.

<sup>24</sup> “Press Profile,” *OSCE Newsletter*, April 2001, 16.



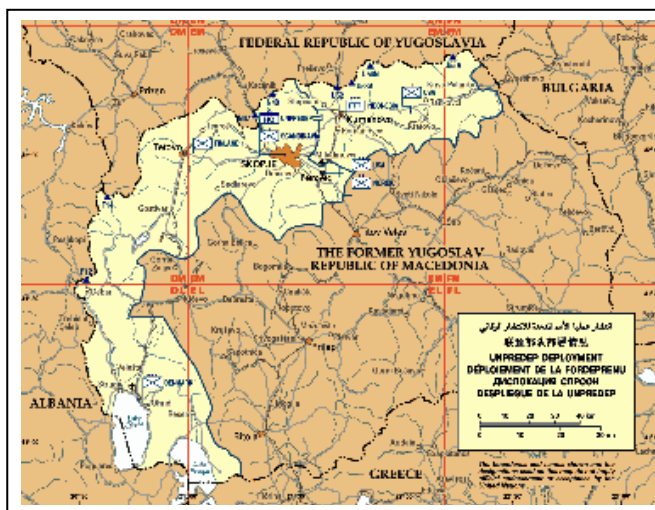
in Macedonia, which would dampen prospects for independence and interfere with smuggling (the agreement would give Macedonia duty-free access to markets in the EU area).

**Smuggling and criminality.** In February 1999—shortly after Macedonia recognized Taiwan—China vetoed extending the UN peacekeeping operation in Macedonia. By summer 1999 the KLA was reported as having regrouped, and there were frequent reports of arms smuggling in and out of Kosovo. The OSCE Mission reported that the absence of a significant international presence had left the area open to organized crime, and noted a machinegun exchange between groups of smugglers and government forces.<sup>25</sup>

In February 2000 a wave of ethnic violence broke out in southern Serbia, which NATO and Albanian sources in Kosovo said were primarily instigated by members of the KLA infiltrating Serbia from Kosovo.<sup>26</sup> Incidents on the Kosovo-Macedonian border increased, including attacks on Macedonian police by organized groups of ethnic Albanians. NATO and Yugoslav forces therefore tightened control over the borders, and conflicts increased between the border police and smugglers (Macedonia was a major transit point for a number of illegal activities such as trafficking in human beings—women in particular—and smuggling of many kinds including arms, tobacco, and heroin from Southwest Asia). The first clash involving government forces occurred in the village of Tanusevci, a smuggling haven and a 1999 KLA base.

**The response of the international community.** Condemnation of the NLA and support for the Macedonian government were almost universal.<sup>27</sup> NATO Secretary General Lord George Robertson ordered an immediate political and military mission to Macedonia, and NATO started dismantling the 5-kilometer buffer zone they had established between Kosovo and Serbia because Albanian guerrillas were using it to stage incursions into Serbia.

The United States strongly condemned the actions of the Albanian extremists and increased monetary, security, and technical assistance to Macedonia.<sup>28</sup> U.S. Secretary of State Colin Powell traveled to the Balkans, and Macedonian President Boris Trajkovski was invited to



<sup>25</sup> “News from the Field,” *OSCE Newsletter*, Aug. 1999, 8; Minorities at Risk, *Chronology for Albanians in Macedonia*.

<sup>26</sup> Minorities at Risk, *Chronology for Albanians in Macedonia*.

<sup>27</sup> “Press Profile,” *OSCE Newsletter*, April 2001, 16.

<sup>28</sup> The United States expressed support for Macedonian sovereignty and territorial integrity, and urged restraint on the part of the Macedonian forces and attention to legitimate Albanian grievances. See U.S. Government, “Fact Sheet: U.S. Support for Macedonia,” May 2, 2001; Kim, *Macedonia: Country Background and Recent Conflict*, Nov. 7, 2001, summary. In June 2001, U.S. President George W. Bush signed Executive Order 13219, “Blocking

Washington, where he met with senior government officials including President George W. Bush.

The OSCE Chairman-in-Office Mircea Geoana and the HCNM issued a joint statement strongly criticizing the unprovoked acts of violence by groups of extremists. The statement included the following from the HCNM:

As the events in the Balkans during the past 10 years have shown, armed conflict leads to disaster for all concerned, whatever their ethnicity. Everything possible has to be done to prevent such an outcome. Recently, the chances of finding solutions for interethnic differences have greatly improved. It would be a tragedy if the ongoing peaceful dialogue would be replaced by armed struggle.<sup>29</sup>

***The resolution of the conflict.*** The fighting continued during the spring and summer, during which Macedonia came close to civil war. In May 2001 Robertson warned that Macedonia was “on the brink of the abyss,” and the international community (particularly NATO, the EU, the OSCE, and the United States) made increasing efforts to restore order.<sup>30</sup> Under international mediation, a ceasefire was brokered in July 2001, and a coalition of Macedonian and Albanian political leaders negotiated the Ohrid Framework Agreement with facilitation by the United States and the EU. The Agreement, signed in August, contained a set of general principles and specific implementing actions such as a national census; a super-majority system for laws directly affecting culture, language, education, and symbols; increased decentralization for local governments; amendments to be made to the constitution; and modifications to be made to laws. Peace was restored, though the fighting escalated as the talks neared completion (OSCE monitors reported that the NLA instigated 90 percent of the new fighting in July).<sup>31</sup>

***SEE University.*** The HCNM wrote later that for a while it had seemed that full-scale civil war was inevitable and that work on the new university might have to stop. Nevertheless, SEE University was completed with only a few weeks’ delay, and initially consisted of five departments: law, business administration, public administration, communication studies, and pedagogic methodology for teachers, and a partnership with the University of Indiana was established. The aims and principles of the university included the following:

- To be trilingual, with courses in Albanian, Macedonian, and English;
- To provide opportunities for young Albanians to study, and therefore serve the interests of the Albanian language and culture, but also serve equally members of other ethnic groups;
- To improve interethnic relations and to promote ethnic harmony, and thus contribute to peace and stability in Macedonia; and

---

Property of Persons Who Threaten International Stabilization Efforts in the Western Balkans,” an order that sanctioned extremist forces in the Balkans, including the NLA.

<sup>29</sup> OSCE Press Release, “Violence a Threat to Peace and Stability in the former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia,” March 15, 2001.

<sup>30</sup> Lord Robertson also described the rebels as “a bunch of murderous thugs whose objective is to destroy a democratic Macedonia,” and accused the rebels of using civilians as human shields in an attempt to provoke “another Balkan bloodbath.” In June he said that the only way to address the legitimate concerns of the ethnic Albanian population was through the normal political process, and that the armed extremists must lay down their arms. See Keesing’s, “Escalating Unrest—Fighting Between Government and Ethnic Albanian Forces,” May 2001, and “Calls for Declaration of Civil War—NATO Involvement,” June 2001.

<sup>31</sup> International Crisis Group, *Macedonia: Still Sliding*, 7.

## Chapter 6. OSCE Principles and Macedonia

- To recognize that each ethnic group has its own specific interests, but also a common interest in promoting a peaceful and prosperous Macedonia.

The university began with 900 students—more students than expected because of the security situation—of which 10 percent were non-Albanians and 40 percent were women.<sup>32</sup> The university opened on November 20, 2001, with Max van der Stoel and the new HCNM, Rolf Ekéus, attending the opening ceremony.

The opening of the university was the fulfillment, in great part, of a major Albanian aspiration: higher education in Albanian, for courses would be taught in Macedonian, Albanian, and English. The implementation had overall positive effects on security, but did generate some protests by those Albanians who wanted the institute to be State-funded. Positive effects included statements by high-level officials from a number of countries and international organizations. A greater effect was the increased opportunity for young persons of all ethnicities in Macedonia, but particularly for Albanian youth, and by 2002 total enrollment had more than doubled.

### OSCE Principles, Implementation, and Effect on Security

**Recommendations and Principles.** From 1993 to 2001 the HCNM made seven formal recommendations in which he made specific recommendations to the Macedonian government, the minority communities in Macedonia—the Albanian community in particular, and the OSCE States and the international community (see Appendix G). All of the recommendations either referred to OSCE principles, or were related to them.

The recommendations primarily referred to principles 10–16 in Group II, which addressed the protection and promotion of rights within the State. These principles involved the responsibility of governments to create and maintain the conditions in which all individuals, including minorities, are able to fully exercise their rights and freedoms; the responsibilities of minorities to fulfill their responsibilities; and requirements regarding respect, in that all groups must respect all other groups, and that governments have the responsibility to promote a climate of respect. The recommendations to other OSCE States primarily addressed the mutual assistance part of Principle 4. Principle 8, which involved preventing security threats from arising, and using peaceful means to resolve disputes that do arise, was a key principle that involved the nonuse of force. Principle 20, which addressed the need to use processes, applied to the recommendations regarding dialogue and mechanisms for dialogue.

The HCNM's recommendations addressed a number of areas including minority participation in public affairs, mechanisms for dialogue, minority access to the media, Albanian-language education, international assistance and international relations, the framework in which to seek solutions to issues involving interethnic tensions, and the maintenance of stability and avoidance of violence. Most of the recommendations in these areas were implemented with positive effects on security; however, the 2001 insurgency caused the most serious negative effect on security. In taking up arms against the government—an action widely seen as illegitimate—the NLA seriously violated a number of OSCE principles. Members of the NLA did not use peaceful means to resolve problems (Principle 8); failed to fulfill their responsibilities (Principle 14); and

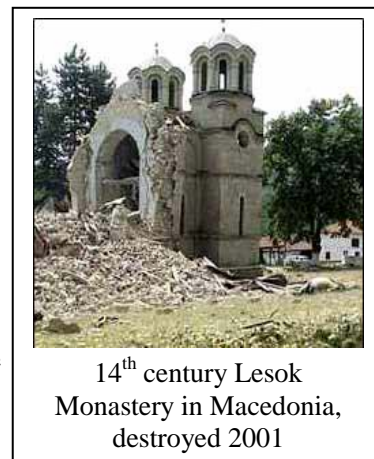
---

<sup>32</sup> Van der Stoel, "The South East European University in Macedonia," 184.

did not respect the rights of others (Principle 16), such as by committing egregious acts including murder and mutilation (government forces and civilians on both sides also committed acts that violated international human rights law).

The non-implementation of OSCE principles had long-lasting negative effects on security. Lives were lost; over 100,000 people became refugees; and hundreds of homes and buildings were destroyed, including 14th century Lesok Monastery.<sup>33</sup> The serious violations of international humanitarian law provoked retaliation and spiraling violence.

The insurgency had negative economic effects. GDP, which had been projected to grow at 6 percent, declined 4.6 percent, and unemployment and the government deficit both surged.<sup>34</sup> The EU reported that the insurgency slowed down the process of making the changes necessary for Macedonia to make progress towards membership. The international community incurred significant costs from the use of NATO forces and prolonged diplomatic efforts.



The conflict negatively affected the rule of law in Macedonia. As part of the Ohrid Framework Agreement that stopped the conflict, the international community accepted the commitment to train 1,000 new minority police officers by July 2003, and the OSCE began this training program, graduating its first class in December 2001. However, two years later, police presence had not yet been completely reintroduced into western Macedonia, where most of the human trafficking and smuggling took place.<sup>35</sup>

In the aftermath of the insurgency, interethnic tensions increased significantly. Tensions increased even more among the Macedonian population regarding Albanian issues, resulting in increased mistrust, fear of secession, demonstrations, and overreactions. The more nationalistic Macedonian political leaders accused the West of supporting the Albanian insurgents, and became increasingly hostile to the international community. The EU reported that negative attitudes to the EU had increased among the Macedonian majority as having forced them into concessions to the Albanian minority.<sup>36</sup>

The conflict deepened divisions at the community level, resulting in increased physical separation as city districts were “claimed” by one group or the other, and separation in mixed-ethnic villages became more marked, and included pressure on non-Macedonians and non-Albanians to take sides. The cleavage included maintaining separate facilities such as shops, clinics, bus stops, playgrounds, and schools: it became common for Macedonian and Albanian students to fight before and after school, boycott classes, and protest policies seen as favoring the other group. Many schools began teaching the two groups in shifts to reduce contact, and parents increasingly sent their children to separate schools.

<sup>33</sup> Kim, *Macedonia: Country Background and Recent Conflict*, Nov. 7, 2001, 8. The NLA also reportedly used people—primarily women and children—as human shields, and Orthodox and Muslim religious sites as military bases and firing positions. See “Press Profile,” *OSCE Newsletter*, June 2001, 17.

<sup>34</sup> GDP declined during the first half of the 1990s, but steadily increased during the second half. See European Commission, *Former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia Stabilisation and Association Report*, 2002, 15.

<sup>35</sup> UNICEF/UNOHCHR/OSCE ODIHR, *Trafficking in Human Beings in South Eastern Europe*, 2003, 177.

<sup>36</sup> European Commission, *Former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia Stabilisation and Association Report*, 2002, 31.

New radical splinter groups formed, such as the so-called Albanian National Army (ANA), which rejected the Ohrid Framework Agreement and pledged to continue to fight for a “greater Albania.” These groups did not appear to have broad public support, but were funded primarily by criminal activity and the diaspora, and overlapped with criminal gangs involved in smuggling. During 2002 and 2003, the ANA claimed responsibility for a series of terrorist attacks in Macedonia, Kosovo, and southern Serbia.

Though a broader Balkan war was avoided, the international community may have sent the message that the use of violence can bring gains. The United States increased its assistance to Macedonia, and in March 2002 the World Bank and the European Commission held an international donor’s conference at which nearly €600 million was pledged.<sup>37</sup> The Albanian community achieved many of its objectives through the Ohrid Framework Agreement, and the NLA’s political leader, Ali Ahmeti, emerged from the conflict as a major figure.

**Summary.** During the 1993–2000 period, the Macedonian government, the majority of the Albanian minority, and the other OSCE States implemented in great part the OSCE principles referenced in the HCNM’s recommendations, and tensions were reduced to the extent that the parties implemented the recommendations. However, in 2001 a minority within the Albanian community, with the involvement of Kosovar Albanians, did not implement Principle 8, which involved the use of peaceful means to resolve disputes and conflicts, and launched attacks in Macedonia that quickly escalated into an insurgency. There is little evidence that the violence was justified: from 1993 to 2000 all parties had made progress towards effective integration, and Albanian aspirations were being fulfilled, particularly higher education in the Albanian language.

The violence severely worsened interethnic tensions within Macedonia, and decreased the effectiveness of the rule of law in the western regions of Macedonia, allowing criminal activities to go unchecked. Several times it appeared that the conflict would descend into civil war; however, this outcome was averted through strong efforts by the international community.

**Epilogue.** For the next several years, though the government implemented almost all of the Ohrid Framework Agreement provisions, the negative consequences of the conflict continued. Interethnic relations continued to be poor; the rule of law was not completely reintroduced into all areas of Macedonia; and radical or unknown groups conducted a number of terrorist attacks.<sup>38</sup> Though the economic situation improved, deep mistrust and mutual suspicion remained.

There were positive indications, however. From 2001 to 2006 there were no incidents of interethnic violence at SEE University. Ethnic relations were slowly rebuilt, and in 2005, for the first time in seven years, poll results showed that a majority of ethnic Macedonians and Albanians held favorable opinions of each other.<sup>39</sup>

\*\*\*

---

<sup>37</sup> Ibid., 30.

<sup>38</sup> European Commission, *Analytical Report on the Application from the former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia for EU Membership*, 2005, 12, 19–20, 29.

<sup>39</sup> U.S. State Department, *Macedonia: Country Reports on Human Rights Practices 2005*.

## Chapter 7. Findings and Conclusions

### Introduction

The purpose of this study was to use the work of the first High Commissioner on National Minorities (HCNM) to test whether or not the implementation of OSCE principles had a significant effect on security in the OSCE area. To answer this question, the study addressed two research questions:

What OSCE security principles were in effect during the first High Commissioner on National Minorities' 1993–2001 tenure?

Did the implementation of the OSCE security principles contained in the first HCNM's recommendations have any significant effect on security?

To answer these questions, the study first extracted from official OSCE documents a set of basic principles designed to guide the security relationships among the member States including their behavior toward their own populations. The study then assessed the practical effects of the implementation of the principles by tracing their application by Max van der Stoep, the first OSCE High Commissioner on National Minorities, to situations involving a high threat of conflict from interethnic tensions in Ukraine, Estonia, and Macedonia.

### Findings and Conclusions

**Findings on the OSCE Principles.** The study identified a set of twenty OSCE principles in effect from 1993 to 2001, the period studied. These principles can be divided into three groups:

- Group I: Principles guiding relations between OSCE States;
- Group II: Principles guiding the protection and promotion of individual rights within States; and
- Group III: Principles guiding implementation, review, and development processes.

**Group I: Principles guiding relations between OSCE States.** The first group of principles guided relations between OSCE States; that is, their international relations. These principles were designed to promote security by avoiding conflict between OSCE States, reducing tensions between them, and strengthening their relations. Through the framework provided by these principles, the States sought to achieve security through three means: first, addressing how States would deal with each other; second, a comprehensive, cooperative, and common approach to security; and third, the use of preventive and peaceful means to resolve tensions and conflicts.

*Relations between OSCE States.* The principles adopted regarding the relations between OSCE States addressed the rights and responsibilities of State sovereignty, and the aspects of those rights that the States agreed to limit. The primary limitations that the States accepted were: the States' form of government would be liberal democracy; respect for individual rights and

fundamental freedoms would be matters of direct and legitimate concern to all participating States; the economic system of all OSCE States would be the market economy and adherence to the rules involved; and the States' mutual involvement with, accountability to, and assistance to each other regarding the implementation of their OSCE commitments. This mutual involvement included participation in the Helsinki process (the periodic review of how well the States were implementing their commitments, and the process of developing the principles and commitments further).

*A comprehensive, cooperative, and common security approach.* Three principles addressed the States' "comprehensive, cooperative, and common security" approach.

*Comprehensive security* was a broad approach that encompassed all areas that could cause tensions, disputes, or conflicts between States or affect their security.<sup>1</sup> Through a comprehensive security approach, States could address threats as wide-ranging as military attack, weapons of mass destruction, weapons proliferation, ethnic conflict, international crime, terrorism, transnational diseases, environmental degradation, unregulated population flows, and human rights violations. The States also adopted the comprehensive security approach because the different aspects of security were interrelated.

*Cooperative security* was an approach that sought to achieve security *with* other States and not *against* them. The cooperative security approach recognized that States had common interests and faced common threats.

*Common security* was an approach that viewed the security of States as "indivisible" or "linked," and thus needed to be pursued in common with other States. The common security approach recognized the need of each State for security, that the level of security in each State affects the security of other countries, and that all States need to contribute to overall security. A common security goal was equal security for all OSCE States, and since insecurity in one State or region decreases the security of other countries, States would not strengthen their security at the expense of the security of other States. In the common security approach, all States need to contribute to overall security, and to promote fundamental rights and the well-being of all peoples.

*The interrelation of the comprehensive, cooperative, and common approaches to security.* The OSCE States viewed the three elements of their comprehensive, cooperative, and common security approach as interrelated and mutually reinforcing. For example, promoting cooperation in security matters can also strengthen the implementation of common security.

*Peaceful means and a preventive focus.* The States adopted one principle that focused on the prevention of security threats, and the methods that would be used to resolve any threats—and the means *not* to be used, such as force and the threat of force. This principle emphasized that the States would take actions to prevent security threats from arising, and would use peaceful means such as mediation, fact-finding missions, and peacekeeping to resolve problems. The States adopted this principle on the belief that preventing security threats, and using peaceful means to resolve any that did arise, provided a better and more cost-effective outcome for all concerned.

---

<sup>1</sup> The OSCE States generally used three categories or "dimensions" to express their comprehensive security approach: the political-military; economic, scientific/technological, and environmental; and human rights aspects (the "human dimension"). The "human dimension" consisted of those commitments made by the OSCE States to ensure full respect for individual rights and fundamental freedoms; abide by the rule of law; promote the principles of democracy; and build, strengthen, and protect democratic institutions.

***Group II: Principles guiding the protection and promotion of individual rights within States.*** Group II principles were intended to increase security by providing the conditions in which all members of the State could fully exercise their fundamental rights and freedoms, and thus reduce the tensions and conflicts within and between States that can result from the nonrespect of rights. In the OSCE States' view, violating individual rights within a State causes tensions that can lead to instability and conflict, which in turn can cause instability in other States, and threaten international security. *The core of Group II principles is that respect for individual rights is inherently stabilizing.* Through the framework provided by these principles, States sought to achieve security by addressing the purpose and form of governments, rights and responsibilities pertaining to national minorities, and the requirement for mutual respect.

*Purpose and form of government.* Governments had the responsibility to establish and maintain the conditions in which all members of the State are able to exercise their individual rights and freedoms: the means to be used were democracy, a rule of law based on human rights, and the market economy (economic liberty). The States accorded primacy to individual rights in that democracy and the rule of law support and enforce respect for human rights. The States further declared that respect for individual rights, democracy, the rule of law, and the market economy were mutually reinforcing and had to be applied as a group.

The States identified the individual person as their primary focus, and declared that the first responsibility of governments was to protect and promote the rights of the individuals who comprise the State. The requirement to ensure that all members of the State are able to exercise their basic rights was based on the belief that these rights and freedoms are inalienable and derive from the dignity inherent in every individual. A practical objective was to achieve the stabilizing effect that can result from respect for individual rights and freedoms.

*Rights and responsibilities pertaining to national minorities.* The States adopted three principles intended to reduce tensions that can arise from minority issues. Two principles addressed government responsibility to ensure that persons belonging to national minorities are able to exercise their rights, to include making special measures as needed, but to also balance the rights of majorities and minorities. Three specific government commitments were to ensure the right of minorities to equality under the law, to participate fully in public affairs, and to develop their identities—but not at the expense of other groups. The States recognized that threats to stability could arise from such threats to security as ethnic conflict, aggressive nationalism, intolerance, and xenophobia, and declared that questions relating to minorities could only be satisfactorily resolved in a democratic political framework based on the rule of law, with a functioning independent judiciary.

A third principle addressed minority responsibilities, which included participating in public affairs; integrating into the wider society to a certain degree, particularly by learning the State language or languages; and being responsible in general. The States further specified that no minority right could be interpreted as implying the right to take any action in contravention of international law, the Helsinki Final Act, including the principle of the territorial integrity of States; or the purposes and principles of the UN Charter.

*Respect.* The States adopted two principles regarding respect. The first principle addressed the responsibility of governments to promote a climate of respect among all persons living on the State's territory. The second principle addressed the responsibility of all individuals and groups to respect all others and their equal rights.



**Group III: Principles guiding implementation, review, and development processes.** The third group of principles guided the processes and mechanisms States would use to interpret, apply, review, and advance OSCE principles and commitments. Group III principles were designed to increase security by enabling States to develop standards and commitments; interpret the body of OSCE principles and commitments and review their implementation; and respond to concerns and threats. Through the framework provided by Group III principles, the States sought to progress towards greater security, stronger relations, and increased respect for basic rights.

The first principle addressed the need for States to apply all OSCE principles equally and unreservedly, and to interpret each principle in light of all of the others and the OSCE *acquis* (the body of OSCE commitments). The second principle addressed the responsibility of all parties—governments, groups, organizations, and individuals—to make good faith and continuous efforts to implement OSCE principles and commitments. The third principle addressed the requirement to identify and build on shared values in both international and intrastate relations. A fourth principle addressed the need to use processes and mechanisms to develop standards and commitments, review their implementation, and respond to State requirements.<sup>2</sup>

**The OSCE Security Principles and the OSCE Security Concept.**<sup>3</sup> The study found that the twenty OSCE principles could be summarized into ten principles in three groups as below:

<b>Table 7–1. The OSCE Security Concept Principles, 2001 Summary</b>	
<p style="text-align: center;"><b>I. Principles Guiding Relations Between OSCE States</b></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Respect for the sovereign rights of States, with agreed-upon limits on sovereign rights.</li> <li>2. Mutual State involvement, accountability, and assistance regarding OSCE commitments.</li> <li>3. A comprehensive, cooperative, and common security approach.</li> <li>4. The prevention of security threats, and the use of peaceful means to reduce tensions and resolve disputes and conflicts.</li> </ol>	<p style="text-align: center;"><b>II. Principles Guiding the Protection and Promotion of Individual Rights within States</b></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>5. State responsibility to ensure respect for individual rights through democracy, the rule of law, and the market economy.</li> <li>6. Rights and responsibilities pertaining to national minorities.</li> <li>7. Respect for the equal rights of all, and a climate of respect.</li> </ol>
<p style="text-align: center;"><b>III. Principles Guiding Implementation, Review, and Development Processes</b></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>8. Good faith, full, equal, and continuous efforts to implement OSCE principles and commitments.</li> <li>9. The development and advancement of shared values.</li> <li>10. Processes and mechanisms.</li> </ol>	

<sup>2</sup> The States used the “Helsinki process” as their primary method to implement this principle. The Helsinki process was originally a series of follow-up meetings during which the OSCE States met to review the implementation of the commitments made through the OSCE, and to set new standards and commitments.

<sup>3</sup> See Appendix A for an articulation and explanation of the OSCE security concept.

The study also found that the OSCE principles as a group formed an OSCE security concept, which can be expressed as follows:

Security depends on the development and implementation of principles guiding three areas: how States deal with each other and resolve problems; the protection and promotion of individual rights within States; and the processes and mechanisms to review and advance values, principles, and commitments.

The approach that the OSCE States established in 1975, and developed over the next quarter of a century, represented a sustained effort by almost all of the world's democracies at the time, and constituted a significant body of thought and practice regarding security, and respect for the individual.

**Findings on the Implementation of OSCE Principles Through the Work of the HCNM.**

From 1993 to 2001, the first HCNM, Max van der Stoep, worked to help States implement the OSCE principles, particularly as the principles applied to minority issues and tensions. The primary tools he used were the OSCE principles themselves; analysis; formal recommendations; visits; consultations; negotiation and mediation, to include roundtables; the advice of teams of experts; political support from the OSCE leadership and other States; and tension-reducing projects funded by OSCE States, international organizations, and NGOs.

In intervening in particular States, the HCNM took the abstract OSCE principles and applied them to specific situations that had a high potential for conflict. In these interventions, the HCNM tried to help States implement their OSCE commitments, but also sought to help States develop the mechanisms and processes that would enable them to resolve issues on their own. His objective was to help States and minorities achieve a society that involved a central core of loyalty to the State and respect for the rights of all, and at the same time provided all State members with the opportunity to develop their identities within the State.

***The effect on security.*** The study analyzed three cases in which the HCNM applied the OSCE principles to three situations with a high potential for a conflict: Crimean autonomy within Ukraine, interethnic relations and separatism in Estonia, and interethnic relations and separatism in Macedonia. In each of the three cases examined, the analysis of the detailed application of the OSCE principles contained in the HCNM recommendations found increases in security when the recommendations were implemented. The effects on security were evident regarding many specific HCNM recommendations on particular issues, but the primary effect on security occurred when the parties implemented the HCNM's overall recommendation regarding a situation. The implementation of OSCE principles increased security in each State, between OSCE States, and in the region.

***Ukraine.*** In Ukraine, when the Ukrainian government and the Crimean administration implemented the HCNM's overall recommendation by finding a mutually acceptable division of responsibilities between them, there was a significant positive effect on security. Though separatist sentiment did not completely disappear, tensions within Ukraine, between the Ukrainian and Russian governments, and in the region were reduced. Within Ukraine there were no further threats between the Ukrainian government and the Crimean administration; no further reports of the buildup of forces; and no threat or outbreaks of violence pertaining to separatism in Crimea. There were no further reports of threats of force by Russia, or of the Russian parliament making efforts to regain Crimea, and the OSCE closed its Mission to Ukraine in part because the

Ukrainian government and the Crimean administration had normalized their relations. There was no further direct HCNM involvement, and no situations regarding Crimea arose that required the attention of the OSCE leadership.<sup>4</sup>

Of particular significance to the security outcome was the implementation of the OSCE principle regarding the resolution of issues using peaceful means. In this area, the primary tools used were negotiation and mediation, to include the advice of constitutional experts and three roundtables, after each of which the contending parties grew closer to a solution.

*Estonia.* In his first formal recommendation to Estonia in 1993, the HCNM made one overall recommendation to the Estonian government, and one to the Russian-speaking minority. His overall recommendation to the government was to integrate the Russian minority by a deliberate policy of integration, particularly by facilitating the acquisition of Estonian citizenship, and of assuring the minority of full equality with Estonian citizens. His overall recommendation to the Russian-speaking minority was to adapt to and develop loyalty towards Estonia as an independent State, and to contribute to their own integration, in particular by learning a basic level of Estonian.

When the Estonian government and the Russian-speaking minority began to seriously implement these overall recommendations, significant effects on security were observed within Estonia, between the Estonian and Russian governments, and in the region. Within Estonia, poll results showed better interethnic relations, and the acquisition of Estonian citizenship increased among ethnic Russians, particularly among young people. Though the Russian government continued to criticize the Estonian government's treatment of the ethnic Russians, the Russian government made no further threats of the use of force against Estonia regarding this treatment—and statements were occasionally made that the situation was not as bad as sometimes portrayed.<sup>5</sup> The closing of the OSCE Mission to Estonia was a further indication of reduced regional tensions.

Of particular significance in the Estonian case was the implementation of the OSCE principle involving mutual assistance among OSCE States. The implementation of this principle was critical to the security outcome in two respects.

First was the support that the EU States (all of which were also OSCE States) gave to the HCNM's recommendations when the European Commission announced that it would be guided by the HCNM's assessment as to whether or not candidate countries met the EU's entrance standards in the area of minority rights. Estonia was a candidate country, and though this study did not focus on why parties did or did not implement the HCNM's recommendations, the study found that the EU's announcement strongly influenced the Estonian government's decisions to implement the recommendations.

Second was the significant financial support that other OSCE States provided for an integration program, Estonian-language training, and other projects aimed at integrating the Russian-speaking minority. This assistance significantly aided the Estonian government in implementing the Group II principles involving the State's responsibility to create the conditions in which all members of the State, including minorities, could exercise their basic rights and

---

<sup>4</sup> As of the time of the completion of this study in 2007.

<sup>5</sup> See, for example, John Finerty, "Russian Foreign Ministry on Estonia: 'Situation Not as Bad as We Thought,'" *CSCE Digest* (Jan. 1997): 7.

freedoms. Without this support, it is not likely that the Estonian government could have afforded the programs.

*Macedonia.* The HCNM's overall recommendation to the Macedonian government and the Albanian minority was, in essence, to engage in a serious, constructive, and continuous dialogue regarding the steps that could be taken to accommodate the specific desiderata of the Albanian minority, and find solutions acceptable to both sides. He also outlined that the dialogue needed to be based on internationally accepted norms and standards, and respect for the sovereignty and territorial integrity of the State and the rule of law. The primary desiderata of the Albanian minority included greater representation in government, increased local self-government, an equal status with the Macedonian majority, better primary and secondary education, and a State-funded Albanian-language university.

From 1994 to 2000 the Macedonian government, the Macedonian majority, and the Albanian minority made slow progress towards implementing the HCNM's recommendations and the OSCE principles contained in them, and the level of tensions fluctuated, twice rising to the point that the HCNM's crisis intervention was required. The level of tensions during this period was, however, affected by external events, particularly the violence and "ethnic cleansing" in Kosovo, which had a strong impact on ethnic Albanians in the Balkan region, including Macedonia. Nevertheless, by 2000, a number of major Albanian aspirations were close to being realized, such as greater representation in all areas of government service, and a private (not State-funded) university that would include courses taught in Albanian and other languages (SEE University).

However, this progress was overshadowed by the outbreak of violence. In early 2001 members of the Albanian minority, in conjunction with Kosovar Albanians, did not implement Principle 8 regarding the peaceful resolution of issues, and launched armed assaults. The effect on security of violating this principle by initiating armed conflict—conflict that was widely seen as illegitimate—was extremely negative. The assaults quickly became an insurgency that threatened to engulf Macedonia in civil war, and the region in a Balkan war. This insurgency greatly increased tensions throughout the region before the OSCE States contained the violence by helping the parties to negotiate the August 2001 Ohrid Framework Agreement. This Agreement, which was based on OSCE principles and the HCNM's recommendations, ended the conflict, reduced regional tensions, and diminished the widespread fear of a regional conflict. However, the conflict resulted in increased interethnic tensions within Macedonia, and contributed to decreased cooperation and more frequent outbreaks of violence for several years.

Of particular significance to the ending of the conflict was the implementation of the OSCE principle involving mutual assistance. Through the extensive efforts made by other OSCE States and international organizations (NATO and the EU in particular), the conflict was ended, and the potential consequences of a wider conflict were avoided.

***The effect on security in context.*** The effect on security was particularly significant in view of the instability and tensions of the post-Cold War period, the OSCE's ongoing institutionalization process, and the limited resources and tools available to the OSCE and the HCNM in the 1990s. The early post-Cold War period was a very difficult and unstable time as the Soviet Union dissolved, new countries appeared, the first armed conflicts in Europe since World War II broke out, and rising tensions elsewhere threatened to erupt. The HCNM monitored the entire OSCE area during this period, and all of his intervention cases involved countries undergoing the difficult transition from communist systems of government to

## Chapter 7. Findings and Conclusions

democracies, and from command economies to market economies. All of the countries carried the legacy of totalitarian regimes, and most had recently gained independence and had little experience of statehood.

The level of the development of the OSCE was significant: in the early 1990s the OSCE had little institutional or operational capability, no military forces, no economic leverage, few resources, and no coercive tools—the most negative measure the OSCE possessed was suspension. The office of HCNM had few tools or resources—in 2001, the HCNM’s total budget was about \$2 million.<sup>6</sup>

Given the challenges of the period, more violence might have been expected than actually occurred; however, with the exception of Macedonia in 2001, no new conflicts based on minority tensions broke out in the OSCE region during the HCNM’s tenure.<sup>7</sup> Therefore, if the HCNM prevented even one conflict, his efforts were very cost effective.<sup>8</sup> A major conclusion that can be drawn from the study regarding the OSCE principles is summarized below:

The systematic articulation of norms widely seen as legitimate, expressed in principles and implemented through mechanisms designed to bring those norms to bear on specific situations, can have a significant positive effect on security.

**Conclusion.** In conclusion, the study showed that the implementation of OSCE principles in Ukraine, Estonia, and Macedonia significantly increased security in those three countries and the OSCE region. Based on the results of the study, the OSCE principles, the OSCE security concept, and the work of the High Commissioner on National Minorities merit further examination, development, and application to national security policy and practice. Governments have tried many approaches and theories to achieve security, and the OSCE provides a compelling experience from which to draw on in the search for security.

\*\*\*\*\*

---

<sup>6</sup> OSCE budget figures.

<sup>7</sup> Yugoslavia was suspended from the OSCE during most of the HCNM’s tenure.

<sup>8</sup> The costs of conflict can be very high even when measured in only monetary terms: from 1992–1996, the international community spent \$54 billion on the conflict in Bosnia (see Brown and Rosecrance, *The Costs of Conflict*, 225). In comparison, during the same period the Office of the HCNM spent less than \$1 million per year (see Kemp, *Quiet Diplomacy in Action*, 19–20; *OSCE Handbook*, 2000, 34; and OSCE budget figures).

## Appendixes

### Appendix A: The OSCE Security Concept, 2001

#### The OSCE Security Concept

**Introduction.** The OSCE security concept was a security framework based on the idea that security depends on principles guiding three areas: how States deal with each other and resolve problems; the protection and promotion of individual rights within States; and the processes to develop, implement, and advance agreements regarding the principles.<sup>1</sup> The OSCE security concept was based on principles that the OSCE States began to develop in 1975 with the Helsinki Final Act, and continued to develop over the next decades and into the 21st century.<sup>2</sup>

The OSCE security concept can be summarized as below, and expressed in ten principles, divided into three groups:

Security depends on the development and implementation of principles guiding three areas: how States deal with each other and resolve problems; the protection and promotion of individual rights within States; and the processes and mechanisms to review and advance values, principles, and commitments.

<b>The OSCE Security Concept Principles, 2001 Summary</b>	
<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Respect for the sovereign rights of States, with agreed-upon limits on sovereign rights.</li> <li>2. Mutual State involvement, accountability, and assistance regarding OSCE commitments.</li> <li>3. A comprehensive, cooperative, and common security approach.</li> <li>4. The prevention of security threats, and the use of peaceful means to reduce tensions and resolve disputes and conflicts.</li> </ol>	<p>Group I: Principles Guiding Relations Between OSCE States</p>
<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>5. State responsibility to ensure respect for individual rights through democracy, the rule of law, and the market economy.</li> <li>6. Rights and responsibilities pertaining to national minorities.</li> <li>7. Respect for the equal rights of all, and a climate of respect.</li> </ol>	<p>Group II: Principles Guiding the Protection and Promotion of Individual Rights within States</p>
<ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>8. Good faith, full, equal, and continuous efforts to implement OSCE principles and commitments.</li> <li>9. The development and advancement of shared values.</li> <li>10. Processes and mechanisms.</li> </ol>	<p>Group III: Principles Guiding Implementation, Review, and Development Processes</p>

<sup>1</sup> In 2001, the OSCE (Organization for Security and Cooperation in Europe), was an international organization comprised of more than fifty democratic countries. The OSCE security concept was the approach to security developed by these countries, a summation of the efforts of nearly all of the world's democracies to identify and implement the standards and principles needed to achieve security, peace, and freedom.

<sup>2</sup> The OSCE principles were extracted from a series of documents adopted by the OSCE States from 1975 to 2001.

## The OSCE Security Principles

**Group I: Principles Guiding Relations Between OSCE States.** The first component of the OSCE security concept consisted of principles guiding relations between OSCE States; that is, their international relations. These principles were designed to provide security by avoiding conflict between OSCE States, reducing tensions between them, and strengthening their relations. Group I principles addressed four areas: respect for the sovereign rights of States, with agreed-upon limits on these rights; mutual State involvement, accountability, and assistance regarding OSCE commitments; a comprehensive, cooperative, and common security approach; and the use of peaceful and preventive methods to prevent and reduce tensions and resolve disputes and conflicts.

**1. *Respect for the sovereign rights of States, with agreed-upon limits on sovereign rights.*** States would respect the rights and responsibilities of State sovereignty, and agreed-upon limits to those rights. Sovereign rights included equality under international law (juridical equality); the rights of territorial integrity; and the right to external and internal political independence, in accordance with international law and the spirit of the Helsinki Final Act. The States accepted limitations on their sovereignty: three specific agreements were that the States' form of government would be liberal democracy; respect for individual rights and fundamental freedoms were matters of direct and legitimate concern to all OSCE States; and the economic system of the OSCE States would be the market economy, and adherence to the rules involved.

**2. *Mutual State involvement, accountability, and assistance regarding OSCE commitments.*** The States would be mutually involved with and accountable to each other regarding the implementation of their OSCE commitments, and assist each other in this implementation. The States fulfilled this commitment primarily through the OSCE, using two methods in particular. One method was the "Helsinki process," which was the periodic review of how well the States were implementing their commitments, and the process of further developing the principles and commitments. A second method was through organizational structures established to assist the participating States in fulfilling their OSCE commitments. An example was the OSCE Office for Democratic Institutions and Human Rights (ODIHR), which the States established to strengthen and defend the liberal democratic form of government, and to help the new democracies in Eastern Europe and the former Soviet Union after the end of the Cold War.

**3. *A comprehensive, cooperative, and common security approach.*** The States would use a "comprehensive, cooperative, and common" approach to security.

*Comprehensive security* was a broad approach that encompassed all areas that could cause tensions, disputes, or conflicts between States, or affect their security. These areas included such threats as military attack, weapons of mass destruction, weapons proliferation, ethnic conflict, international crime, terrorism, transnational diseases, environmental degradation, unregulated population flows, and human rights violations. The States adopted the comprehensive security approach so that they would be able to address all issues that caused tensions between them, and because the different aspects of security were interrelated.

## Appendixes

The OSCE generally used three categories or “dimensions” to express their comprehensive security approach: the political-military; economic, scientific/technological, and environmental; and human rights aspects (the “human dimension”).<sup>3</sup> The three dimensions of security follow.

<b>The Three Dimensions of Comprehensive Security</b>		
I. The Political-Military Dimension	II. The Economic, Scientific & Technological, and Environmental Dimension	III. The Human Dimension: Individual Rights, Democracy, and the Rule of Law

*Cooperative security* was an approach that sought to achieve security *with* other States and not *against* them, and recognized that States have common interests and face common threats. Cooperative security was required because many threats can only be met by working together, and since problems in one State can affect others, States should cooperate to prevent crises and reduce the risk of existing crises from worsening. Furthermore, since cooperation can benefit all States, it is in their best interest. The vast majority of people in any country share common interests in economic prosperity and the ability to exercise rights and freedoms, and cooperative security can promote those interests.

*Common security* was an approach that viewed the security of States as “indivisible” or “linked,” and thus needed to be pursued in common with other States. The common security approach recognized the need of each State for security, that the level of security in each State affects the security of other countries, and that all States need to contribute to overall security. A common security goal was equal security for all OSCE States, and since insecurity in one State or region decreases the security of other countries, States would not strengthen their security at the expense of the security of other States. All States had the responsibility to contribute to overall security, and to promote fundamental rights and the well-being of all peoples.

*The interrelation of the comprehensive, cooperative, and common approaches to security.* The three elements of the States’ comprehensive, cooperative, and common security approach were interrelated and mutually reinforcing. For example, promoting cooperation in security matters can also strengthen the implementation of common security.

**4. The prevention of security threats, and the use of peaceful means to reduce tensions and resolve disputes and conflicts.** States would take actions to prevent security threats from arising, and use peaceful means to resolve existing problems. This principle was based on the belief that preventing security threats, and using peaceful means to resolve any that did arise, provided a better and more cost-effective outcome for all concerned.

The peaceful settlement of disputes was considered an essential complement to the duty of States to refrain from the threat or use of force, and also essential for international peace and security. Preventive means included such methods as mediation, fact-finding missions, peacekeeping, openness and predictability, military constraints, confidence-building measures,

---

<sup>3</sup> The “human dimension” consisted of those commitments made by the OSCE States to ensure full respect for individual rights and fundamental freedoms; abide by the rule of law; promote the principles of democracy; and build, strengthen, and protect democratic institutions. (Note that the OSCE has used different constructs to express its comprehensive security concept, and that the concept can be used to organize the tools of national strategy.)



arms control, and the control of dangerous technologies. States would not use certain methods to resolve threats, such as force or the threat of force.

In regard to disputes and conflicts, the States would endeavor in good faith and a spirit of cooperation to reach a rapid and equitable solution on the basis of international law, and act in a manner that would not endanger international peace, security, and justice. The States, whether or not parties to a dispute among them, would refrain from any action that might aggravate a situation and thereby make a peaceful settlement more difficult.

**Group II: Principles Guiding the Protection and Promotion of Individual Rights within States.** The second component of the OSCE security concept consisted of principles guiding the protection and promotion of individual rights and freedoms within States.<sup>4</sup> The principles addressed three areas: government responsibility to establish and maintain the conditions in which all members of the State could exercise their rights and freedoms: the means to be used were democracy, the rule of law, and the market economy; rights and responsibilities pertaining to national minorities; and the requirement for respect among all parties. Group II principles were designed to protect individual rights and freedoms, and thereby increase both national and international security.

The principles were based on the premise that all people have individual rights and freedoms that are inalienable and derive from the inherent dignity of the human person. These rights and freedoms are the birthright of all human beings, and are essential for their free and full development. The individual is the primary focus of governments, and the protection and promotion of human rights and fundamental freedoms is the first responsibility of governments.

Group II principles were intended to increase security by providing the conditions in which all members of the State could fully exercise their rights and freedoms, and thus reduce the tensions and conflicts within and between States that can result from the nonrespect of rights. In this view, violating individual rights within a State causes tensions that can lead to instability and conflict, which in turn can cause instability in other States, and threaten international security. The core of Group II principles in terms of security is that respect for individual rights is inherently stabilizing, and thereby contributes to both national and international security. Respect for human rights constitutes one of the foundations of international order, freedom, justice, and peace, and the protection and promotion of rights through democracy and the rule of law is required for lasting security.

**5. State responsibility to ensure respect for individual rights through democracy, the rule of law, and the market economy.** States had the responsibility to establish and maintain the conditions in which all members of the State are able to exercise their individual rights and freedoms: the means to be used would be a democratic political framework, a rule of law based on human rights, and the market economy (economic liberty). The States considered this political framework as the only system able to effectively guarantee full respect for individual rights and freedoms, equal rights and status for all citizens, the free pursuit of legitimate interests and aspirations, political pluralism, and restraints on the abuse of government power. As such, democracy would be the OSCE States' only system of government.

---

<sup>4</sup> The terms "individual rights" and "human rights" are generally used interchangeably.

## Appendixes

*A democratic form of government.* A democratic form of government was the first means governments would use to protect and promote individual rights. A democratic government included a representative form of government with characteristics that included the following:

- the executive is accountable to the elected legislature or the electorate;
- a clear separation is maintained between the State and political parties—in particular, political parties are not merged with the State; and
- periodic, free, and fair elections are held for which individuals and groups have the right to freely establish political parties, organizations can compete with each other on a basis of equal treatment before the law and the authorities, and governmental and nongovernmental observers are present for national elections. The will of the people, expressed through periodic free and fair elections, is the basis of government legitimacy and authority.

*The rule of law.* The rule of law was the second means governments would use to protect and promote individual rights. The rule of law included that judges are independent and the judicial services operate impartially; military forces and the police are under the control of, and accountable to, civil authorities; and government and public authorities comply with their constitutions and are not above the law. The rule of law would be based on respect for individual rights: “The rule of law does not mean merely a formal legality which assures regularity and consistency in the achievement and enforcement of democratic order, but justice based on the recognition and full acceptance of the supreme value of the human personality and guaranteed by institutions providing a framework for its fullest expression.”<sup>5</sup>

*The market economy.* The market economy (economic liberty) was the third means governments would use to protect and promote individual rights. All individuals have the right to exercise individual enterprise, and to own property alone or in association with others. Economic freedom is essential to the effective functioning of markets and economies, and fosters economic progress. The market economy would be the States’ only economic system, and States would accept the rules involved in the international economic and financial system.

*The primacy of individual rights.* The States did not view democracy, the rule of law, and the market economy as ends in themselves, but as means to support and enforce respect for human rights. The rule of law protects and enforces respect for rights and freedoms, and democratic institutions support individual rights through such means as safeguarding freedom of expression, limiting governments, ensuring respect for all groups in society, and providing equality of opportunity for each person.

*Individual rights, democracy, the rule of law, and the market economy as interdependent and mutually reinforcing.* The States viewed human rights, democracy, the rule of law, and the market economy as interrelated and mutually reinforcing. Respect for the human person is the foundation of democracy and the rule of law, democracy is an inherent element of the rule of law, and the rule of law must be based on the recognition of the value of the individual and the individual’s rights. The market economy is necessary for economic growth, and democratic institutions foster economic progress: the free will of the individual, exercised in democracy and protected by the rule of law, is the basis for sustainable prosperity.

---

<sup>5</sup> Copenhagen Document, 1990, 3.

**6. Rights and responsibilities pertaining to national minorities.** Governments and minorities each had responsibilities pertaining to national minorities.<sup>6</sup> The fulfilment of these responsibilities can increase security by ensuring that minorities are able to fully exercise their rights, and thus reduce the tensions that can arise from minority issues. Respect for the rights of persons belonging to minorities is essential for stability and peace, for tensions can arise from such threats to security as ethnic conflict, aggressive nationalism, xenophobia, and intolerance.<sup>7</sup>

*Government responsibilities.* Government responsibilities included ensuring the right of national minorities to equality under the law; to participate fully in public affairs; and to develop their identity, though not at the expense of other groups.

— *Equality under the law.* Governments had the responsibility to ensure equal protection and nondiscrimination for all individuals, regardless of any group that a person may belong to. Where necessary, States would adopt special measures to ensure that persons belonging to national minorities had full equality with other citizens in exercising their rights and freedoms.

— *Minority participation in public affairs.* Governments had the responsibility to ensure that minorities could participate fully in public affairs, to include making special provisions as necessary.<sup>8</sup>

— *The development of identity.* Governments had the responsibility to ensure that persons belonging to national minorities were able to exercise their right to freely express, preserve, and develop their ethnic, cultural, linguistic, or religious identity. Any government measures to protect the identity of national minorities, and create the conditions in which they could promote their identities, would be in accordance with the principles of equality and nondiscrimination with respect to the other citizens. Limits to the freedom to develop and promote identity included that no action could be illegal; imperil the safety of others; conflict with public order, public health, national security, or morals; or infringe on the freedoms or rights of others.

---

<sup>6</sup> The States did not define a national minority, but stated that to belong to one was a matter of “individual choice” and that “no disadvantage may arise from the exercise of such choice”—see the Copenhagen Document, 1990, 18. By emphasizing that each person had the right to decide whether or not to belong to a national minority, the States in effect agreed not to impose a definition. The OSCE stressed individuals rather than groups on the basis that all groups consist of individuals acting in community, and therefore, OSCE documents usually referred to “persons belonging to national minorities” rather than to “national minorities.” Many democratic States rejected the idea of “group rights” because of the State’s focus on the individual, and because of the potential for groups to dominate individuals. However, some countries recognized certain group rights, such as the right to education to a particular level in a group’s mother tongue.

<sup>7</sup> The realization of the security aspects of minorities came as a result of the many wars in Europe during the 20th century, in which tensions relating to minorities were a major cause of conflict. Max van der Stoel addressed this point as follows: “On the basis of our sad European history during which minorities have been subjected to all manner of denial of rights, abuse, and even attempted extermination, we have...finally understood that persons belonging to minorities must not only be protected, but also supported.” See Max van der Stoel, address, “The Role and Importance of Integrating Diversity,” Oct. 18, 1998.

<sup>8</sup> To help States achieve minority participation in government, a panel of international experts made recommendations on ways to facilitate this involvement, *The Lund Recommendations on the Effective Participation of National Minorities in Public Life*. The *Recommendations* outlined ways that States can include minorities in public life while enabling them to maintain their own identity and characteristics, and thereby promote good governance and the integrity of the State. Recommendations included such measures as special provisions for decentralization, autonomy, minority representation, and mechanisms for dialogue. These kinds of ways can enable minorities to maintain their identity while including them in the overall life of the State, and to have a greater say over decisions that affect them, without breaking up States.

*Minority responsibilities.* Minority responsibilities included participating in public affairs; integrating into the wider society to a certain degree, particularly by learning the State language or languages; and maintaining responsible behavior in general. No minority right could be interpreted as implying the right to take any action in contravention of international law; the Helsinki Final Act, including the principle of the territorial integrity of States; or the purposes and principles of the UN Charter.

*The role of democracy.* The States declared that questions relating to national minorities could only be satisfactorily resolved in a democratic political framework based on the rule of law, with a functioning independent judiciary. Democracy, the rule of law, and full respect for human rights are the best guarantees for a positive situation for minorities.

**7. *Respect for the equal rights of all, and a climate of respect.*** Governments had the responsibility to promote a climate of respect, and all individuals and groups had the responsibility to respect all others and their equal rights. The involvement of the wider society is essential in promoting respect and balancing competing interests—nongovernmental organizations such as political parties, trade unions, human rights organizations, and religious groups have important roles in promoting respect, diversity, and the resolution of questions relating to national minorities.

Respect is necessary among individuals and groups, whether groups are based on race, ethnicity, religion, or however else formed. The States recognized the contributions of culture to security, and the contributions of minorities to society, and would foster these contributions.

### **Group III: Principles Guiding Implementation, Review, and Development Processes.**

The third component of the OSCE security concept consisted of principles guiding the processes and mechanisms States would use to develop, interpret, and apply OSCE principles, standards, and commitments; review their implementation; advance them further; and respond to State requirements. The States intended for Group III principles to increase security by enabling the States to address current and future security threats and concerns; be responsive to new requirements; and progress towards greater security, stronger relations, and increased respect for individual rights. Group III principles addressed three areas: good faith, full, equal, and continuous efforts to implement OSCE principles and commitments; the development and advancement of shared values; and processes and mechanisms.

**8. *Good faith, full, equal, and continuous efforts to implement OSCE principles and commitments.*** States would apply all OSCE principles equally and unreservedly, and would interpret all principles in light of all of the others, and in light of the OSCE *acquis* (the body of OSCE commitments).<sup>9</sup> The principles were intended to help States achieve balanced progress towards political, military, economic, and human rights goals. Progress towards shared objectives requires the active involvement and good faith efforts of all parties—governments, groups, organizations, and individuals—to make continuous efforts to implement OSCE principles and commitments.

The full implementation of OSCE commitments takes time and continued effort by all parties. States are not perfect and may not always live up to all of their OSCE commitments, but failing to meet standards meant continuing to try.

---

<sup>9</sup> New standards and commitments were usually expressed in OSCE documents, and thus became part of the *acquis*.

## Appendixes

**9. The development and advancement of shared values.** States would identify and build on shared values. States would conduct their international relations based on the shared values of respect for individual rights and freedoms, democracy, the rule of law, and the market economy. Shared values guide the relationship between the State and the people who comprise the State: the States' common aims included respect for human rights and fundamental freedoms, including the rights of persons belonging to national minorities; democracy; the rule of law; and economic liberty. Shared values and norms develop over time, and the advancement of human rights, democracy, and the rule of law is essential to strengthening peace and security.

**10. Processes and mechanisms.** Processes and mechanisms are needed to develop standards and commitments, review their implementation, and respond to State requirements. These processes need to be flexible and responsive to State needs, concerns, and situations. Agreed-upon processes and mechanisms are necessary to achieve and maintain international security.

### Summary

The OSCE security concept can be summarized as below, and expressed in ten principles, divided into three groups:

Security depends on the development and implementation of principles guiding three areas: how States deal with each other and resolve problems; the protection and promotion of individual rights within States; and the processes and mechanisms to review and advance values, principles, and commitments.

<b>The OSCE Security Concept Principles, 2001 Summary</b>	
<p style="text-align: center;"><b>I. Principles Guiding Relations Between OSCE States</b></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>1. Respect for the sovereign rights of States, with agreed-upon limits on sovereign rights.</li> <li>2. Mutual State involvement, accountability, and assistance regarding OSCE commitments.</li> <li>3. A comprehensive, cooperative, and common security approach.</li> <li>4. The prevention of security threats, and the use of peaceful means to reduce tensions and resolve disputes and conflicts.</li> </ol>	<p style="text-align: center;"><b>II. Principles Guiding the Protection and Promotion of Individual Rights within States</b></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>5. State responsibility to ensure respect for individual rights through democracy, the rule of law, and the market economy.</li> <li>6. Rights and responsibilities pertaining to national minorities.</li> <li>7. Respect for the equal rights of all, and a climate of respect.</li> </ol>
<p style="text-align: center;"><b>III. Principles Guiding Implementation, Review, and Development Processes</b></p> <ol style="list-style-type: none"> <li>8. Good faith, full, equal, and continuous efforts to implement OSCE principles and commitments.</li> <li>9. The development and advancement of shared values.</li> <li>10. Processes and mechanisms.</li> </ol>	

\*\*\*

**Appendix B. Table of Documents Analyzed for OSCE Security Principles**

Content analysis was done on the following documents in order to identify and articulate the OSCE security principles that were in effect in January 1993, and from January 1993 to June 2001. The OSCE States usually adopted documents, but on occasion signed them, such as the 1975 Helsinki Final Act and the 1990 Charter of Paris for a New Europe.

<b>Table B–1. OSCE Documents Analyzed for Security Principles</b>		
<b>Title</b> *	<b>Year</b>	<b>Type of Document</b>
1. Helsinki Final Act*	1975	Summit document
2. Belgrade Document	1978	Concluding Document, first Follow-up Meeting
3. Madrid Document	1983	Concluding Document, second Follow-up Meeting
4. Vienna Document	1989	Concluding Document, third Follow-up Meeting
5. Copenhagen Document	1990	Human Dimension document
6. Charter of Paris*	1990	Summit document
7. Moscow Document	1991	Human Dimension document
8. Helsinki Document	1992	Summit document
9. Budapest Document	1994	Summit document
10. Lisbon Document	1996	Summit document
11. Istanbul Document	1999	Summit document

\* Documents signed at the highest political level, that of Heads of State or Government.

---

\* The titles usually used in referring to the documents—see the bibliography for the full titles.

### Appendix C. Analysis of Level-IV States by Geographic Region

**Balkan region: Albania, Croatia, and Macedonia.** The principal area of concern in Albania was the Greek minority, and the principal issues were political representation, education, use of language, and separatism. In Croatia the principal concern was minorities, in particular Serbs, and the primary issues were population dislocation and post–conflict distrust. In Macedonia, the principal area of concern was the Albanian minority, and the primary issues were political representation, education, and separatism. Macedonia also experienced outbreaks of violence in 1995 and 1997 that required HCNM crisis intervention, and in 2001 experienced intrastate conflict (including terrorism).

**Baltic region: Estonia and Latvia.** The problems faced by Estonia and Latvia were generally similar: both had been independent States forcibly incorporated into the Soviet Union, and subjected to political, economic, and cultural Sovietization after World War II. Soviet policies towards both countries included forced population transfers (deportation of Estonians and Latvians, and resettlement of Russian-speakers in their place); the collectivizing of farms; and Russification regarding language, education, and culture. These policies resulted in large demographic changes in both countries: from 1934 to 1989, the percentage of ethnic Estonians in Estonia dropped from 88 to 61 percent, and in Latvia the percentage dropped from 73 to 52 percent.

The principal area of concern was majority-minority relations, and issues included citizenship (there were several hundred thousand stateless Russians in both countries), language, education, and the continued presence of Russian military forces. Statements by Russian officials were interpreted to mean that Russia was considering the use of force against Estonia and Latvia to protect the rights of Russians there. Estonia also had the issue of separatism: a large percentage of the Russian minority was concentrated in the northeastern area contiguous to Russia, and sentiment for autonomy or joining with Russia was strong. This situation threatened to erupt in 1993 when the northern cities of Narva and Sillamäe declared their intention to hold a referendum on autonomy, sparking a crisis requiring HCNM intervention.

**Central European region: Hungary, Slovakia, and Romania.** The principal areas of concern were the Slovak minority in Hungary, and the Hungarian minority in Slovakia and Romania. The primary issues were political representation, language, and education. Many of the problems stemmed from the redrawing of borders after World War I at which time Hungary ceded two-thirds of its territory to Romania, Czechoslovakia, and Yugoslavia, causing over 3 million Hungarians to become minorities in those countries.

**Near-Russia region: Moldova and Ukraine.** The principal areas of concern in Moldova were the Russian, Ukrainian, and Gagauz minorities, and the primary issues were language, education, the consequences of Russification, and separatism to include the “frozen” separatist conflict over Transdnistria.<sup>10</sup> The principal areas of concern in Ukraine were the status of Crimea, the resettlement of Crimean Tatars (who had been deported to Central Asia during World War II), and majority-minority relations. The primary issues were separatism in Crimea, which resulted in HCNM crisis intervention in 1995; language; education; the consequences of Russification; the potential radicalization of Tatar Islamic youth; and possible spillover effects from the conflict in Chechnya.

**Central Asian region: Kazakhstan and Kyrgyzstan.** The principal areas of concern were the emigration of the Russian and German minorities, and the potential radicalization of Islamic youth.

---

<sup>10</sup> The Gagauz were an ethnically Turkish people of Orthodox Christian faith.

Appendixes

<b>Table C-1. Threat Analysis in Level-IV States</b>			
<b><u>Level IV States</u></b>	<b><u>Interstate Conflict Based on Minority Tensions?</u></b>	<b><u>Intrastate Conflict Based on Minority Tensions?</u></b>	<b><u>HCNM Crisis Intervention?</u></b>
<b>1. Albania</b>	No	No	No
<b>2. Croatia</b>	No	No	No
<b>3. Estonia</b>	No (Russia implied threats of force 1993–1995)	No	Yes: 1993
<b>4. Hungary</b>	No	No	No
<b>5. Kazakhstan</b>	No	No	No
<b>6. Kyrgyzstan</b>	No	No	No
<b>7. Latvia</b>	No (Russia implied threats of force 1993–1995)	No	No
<b>8. Lithuania</b>	No	No	No
<b>9. Macedonia</b>	No	Yes: 2001 (also interethnic clashes 1995, 1997)	Yes: 1995, 1997, 2001
<b>10. Moldova</b>	No	No	No
<b>11. Romania</b>	No	No	No
<b>12. Russia</b>	No	No	No
<b>13. Slovakia</b>	No	No	No
<b>14. Ukraine</b>	No	No	Yes: 1995



**Appendix D. Data Collection and Analysis Form**

<u><b>Title</b></u>
<b><u>1. Subject.</u></b>
<b><u>2. HCNM specific recommendation(s).</u></b>
<b><u>3. OSCE security principle(s) involved.</u></b>
<b><u>4. Implementation chronology.</u></b>
<b><u>5. Observed effect(s) on security.</u></b>
<b><u>6. Notes.</u></b>
<b>Data Collection and Analysis Form—August 8, 2006</b>

## Appendixes

### Appendix E. HCNM Recommendations to Ukraine Regarding Crimea

<u>HCNM Specific Recommendations.</u>	<u>OSCE Principle(s) Referenced</u>	<u>Imple-mented?</u>	<u>Observable Effect(s) on Security?</u>
<b>I. To the Ukrainian Government and the Crimean Administration of the Autonomous Republic of Crimea (ARC)</b>			
1. Reach a settlement regarding the division of responsibilities between the central government and the ARC that would maintain the territorial integrity of Ukraine but also contain a complete program of steps to solve various issues concerning the implementation of the formula of substantial autonomy for Crimea, especially in the economic field. (May 15, 1994)	2, 20	Yes	Yes
2. Avoid any action that could lead to an escalation of existing tensions. (May 15, 1995)	6, 8	Yes	Yes
3. Divide responsibilities between the central government of Ukraine and the ARC as follows: Ukrainian government: defense, the armed forces, and foreign policy. —Consult the ARC before concluding treaties of special relevance for Crimea, and include representatives in a number of official delegations to other States; —Make arrangements to ensure that an equitable portion of the revenues of Ukrainian property in Crimea and the natural resources of Crimea will be used for the benefit of Crimea; and —Taking into account the Ukrainian legal order, give the ARC the right to conclude international agreements regarding commercial and cultural questions, and the right to open trade offices abroad. (Oct. 12, 1995)	13	Yes	Yes
4. In lieu of a treaty between the ARC and Sevastopol, set up a tripartite commission, composed of representatives of Ukraine, the ARC, and Sevastopol, to come forward with proposals for intensifying the collaboration between Sevastopol and the ARC in various fields. (Oct. 12, 1995)	20	No	Not observed
5. Make a special effort to speed up solving the remaining constitutional differences, and for the ARC parliament to give renewed consideration to the articles still in dispute within a month, and for the Ukrainian parliament to consider the ARC parliament's new proposals as soon as possible thereafter. (March 19, 1996)	6, 18	No	Yes

## Appendixes

<u>HCNM Specific Recommendations.</u>	<u>OSCE Principle(s) Referenced</u>	<u>Implemented?</u>	<u>Observable Effect(s) on Security?</u>
6. Maintain the momentum in narrowing the gap between the positions of Ukraine and the ARC regarding a considerable number of issues, make determined efforts soon to resolve the remaining differences, and do nothing that could lead to a worsening of the atmosphere in which future negotiations will be conducted. (April 5, 1996)	18	Yes	Yes
<b>II. To the Ukrainian Government.</b>			
1. Consider OSCE assistance, particularly a team of constitutional and economic experts who could, after investigating the issues in dispute, provide some suggestions for solutions. (May 15, 1994)	4	Yes	Yes
2. Use the 1992 Ukrainian law that divided powers between Ukraine and the ARC and that did not enter into force, with some modifications and additions, as the future ARC constitution, and for the Ukrainian parliament to adopt a parallel constitutional law with the same content, and if the 1992 Ukrainian law is adopted, end the subordination of the Crimean government to the government of Ukraine and do not dissolve the ARC parliament. (May 15, 1995)	13	Yes	Yes
3. Adopt, as quickly as possible, a Ukrainian law on the approval of the ARC constitution that would approve the coming into force of the ARC constitution with the exception of those articles that are still in dispute. (March 19, 1996)	19	Yes	Yes
4. Agree to have a permanent arrangement regarding the one channel budget system, if simultaneous agreement can be reached on the supervision of the system and on the manner of assuring respect for the Ukrainian unified tax system, and ensuring an equitable share of the future revenues from oil and gas deposits in the continental shelf surrounding Crimea. (April 5, 1996)	12, 13	Yes	Yes
5. Declare its willingness to consult with the appropriate authorities of the ARC regarding matters of military defense and security relevant for the ARC, and to inform the appropriate Crimean authorities on steps envisaged in these relevant areas. (April 5, 1996)	6, 12, 13	Yes	Yes
6. Do not deviate from the aim of providing Crimea with substantial autonomy in those fields that do not belong to the exclusive responsibility of Ukraine. (April 5, 1996)	18	Yes	Yes

## Appendixes

<u>HCNM Specific Recommendations.</u>	<u>OSCE Principle(s) Referenced</u>	<u>Implemented?</u>	<u>Observable Effect(s) on Security?</u>
<b>III. To the Crimean Administration.</b>			
1. Stop plans for a referendum on the ARC constitution that was abolished by the Ukrainian parliament. (May 15, 1995)	2	Yes	Yes
2. Delete references to Crimean citizenship in the draft ARC constitution. (Oct. 12, 1995)	2	Yes	Yes
3. Make the following editorial changes in the draft law on the approval of the ARC constitution: —Replace “Republic of Crimea” with the “Autonomous Republic of Crimea.” —Replace “citizens of Crimea” with “citizens of Ukraine residing in Crimea.” —Replace “the people of Crimea” with “the population of Crimea.” (March 19, 1996)	2	Yes	Yes
4. Refrain from organizing a referendum, or a poll, in the ARC on the November 1995 ARC constitution. (April 5, 1996)	2	Yes	Yes
5. Make a number of changes and deletions to the November 1995 ARC constitution. (April 5, 1996)	2	Yes	Yes

### **Formal Recommendations to the Ukrainian Government Regarding Crimea.**

1. Letter from OSCE HCNM Max van der Stoel to Mr. Anatoly Zlenko, Minister for Foreign Affairs of Ukraine, May 15, 1994.
2. Unpublished letter from OSCE HCNM Max van der Stoel to Mr. Hennady Udovenko, Minister for Foreign Affairs of Ukraine, May 15, 1995. (See Kemp, *Quiet Diplomacy in Action*, 221–222; Kulyk, *Revisiting a Success Story*, 44–45; and Foundation on Inter-Ethnic Relations, *Bibliography on the OSCE High Commissioner on National Minorities*, 1997, 21.)
3. Letter from OSCE HCNM Max van der Stoel to Mr. Hennady Udovenko, Minister for Foreign Affairs of Ukraine, October 12, 1995.
4. Letter from OSCE HCNM Max van der Stoel to Mr. Hennady Udovenko, Minister for Foreign Affairs of Ukraine, March 19, 1996.
5. Letter from OSCE HCNM Max van der Stoel to Mr. Hennady Udovenko, Minister for Foreign Affairs of Ukraine, April 5, 1996.

Appendixes

**Appendix F. HCNM Recommendations to Estonia**

<u>HCNM Specific Recommendations.</u>	<u>OSCE Principle(s) Referenced</u>	<u>Implemented?</u>	<u>Observable Effect(s) on Security?</u>
<b><u>I. To the Estonian Government.</u></b>			
<b>I-1. Naturalization: Policy.</b>			
1. Grant citizenship to children born in Estonia who would otherwise be stateless. (April 6, 1993)	12	Yes	Yes
2. Consider the psychological effects of the proposed naturalization law on the Russian-speaking population, including its possible destabilizing effects, and therefore, do not promulgate "The Law on Aliens," adopted by the Riigikogu on June 21, 1993, in its present form. (July 1, 1993)	10, 12	Yes	Yes
3. Use humanitarian considerations and reasonableness as the guiding principles regarding those who neither qualify for citizenship nor have the status of permanent residents. (April 6, 1993)	10, 12	Yes	Not observed
4. Delay the entry into force of the law requiring citizenship for civil servants. (Dec. 11, 1995)	12, 13	Yes	Not observed
<b>I-2. Naturalization: Process.</b>			
1. Allow reapplication for citizenship. (April 6, 1993)	12	Yes	Not observed
2. Make explicit that unemployment payment meets the legal income requirement. (April 6, 1993)	12	Yes	Not observed
3. Ensure nondiscrimination in citizenship matters in accordance with the International Convention on the Elimination of All Forms of Racial Discrimination when enacting or implementing legal provisions concerning nationality, citizenship, or naturalization. (April 6, 1993)	10	Yes	Not observed
4. Ensure maximum publicity for the language law and its implementing regulations, especially among the Russian population. (April 6, 1993)	12	In part	Yes
5. Continue efforts to inform the non-Estonian population about legislation, regulations, and practical questions concerning citizenship, language requirements, etc. (April 6, 1993)	12	In part	Yes
6. Ensure that the Virumaa Information Center can effectively contribute to informing the Russian population in the Northeast. (April 6, 1993)	12	In part	Yes
<b>I-3. Naturalization: Constitution Exam.</b>			
1. Make the constitution exam considerably easier. (Dec. 11, 1995)	12	In part	Not observed

## Appendixes

<u>HCNM Specific Recommendations.</u>	<u>OSCE Principle(s) Referenced</u>	<u>Imple-mented?</u>	<u>Observable Effect(s) on Security?</u>
<b>I-4. Naturalization: Language Requirements.</b>			
1. Set the language exam standard as the conduct of a simple conversation. (April 6, 1993)	12	Yes	Yes
2. Involve the Council of Europe and OSCE in the language exam standard. (July 1, 1993)	4	Yes	Yes
3. Waive all language requirements for the elderly and disabled. (April 6, 1993)	12	In part	Yes
4. Ensure consistent interpretation of the law on language requirements. (April 6, 1993)	11	Yes	Yes
5. Ensure that language testing fees are not prohibitively expensive. (April 6, 1993)	12	Yes	Not observed
6. Allow retesting of the language exam. (April 6, 1993)	12	Yes	Yes
<b>I-5. Naturalization: Residence Permits.</b>			
1. Provide residence permit application forms in Russian. (March 9, 1994)	12	Yes	Not observed
2. Have noncitizen representatives cooperate in the registration process. (March 9, 1994)	12, 14	Yes	Not observed
3. Do not make people who settled in Estonia before July 1, 1990, provide different certificates or pay application fees for residence permits. (March 9, 1994)	12	Yes	Not observed
4. Make the application process for residence permits simple and smooth. (March 9, 1994)	10	In part	Yes
5. Extend the deadline for residence permit applications. (March 9, 1994)	12	Yes	Yes
6. Count residence from March 30, 1990, and the time of actual residence in Estonia, on the basis of permanent registration in the former Estonian Soviet Socialist Republic, and on the basis of temporary or permanent permits under the new Law on Aliens. (Dec 8, 1994)	12	Yes	Not observed
7. Speed up the process for residence permits and alien passports. (Oct. 28, 1996)	10	Yes	Yes
8. Delete the requirement that a residence permit will not be issued to any alien “who does not respect the constitution system and does not observe Estonia’s legal acts.” (July 1, 1993)	11	No	Not observed
9. Delete or adapt the article stating that a residence permit will not be issued to any alien “who with his or her actions has compromised Estonia’s national interests or international reputation.” (July 1, 1993)	11	Yes	Not observed
10. Establish a clear and legally binding provision ensuring the same rights for temporary residents as for permanent residents, and provide relevant information. (March 9, 1994)	12	Yes	Yes
11. Reconsider or reformulate the requirement that a residence permit will not be issued to aliens who have served in an armed forces career position of a foreign State, or to family members, to ensure that a great number of Russians will not be expelled. (July 1, 1993)	12	No	Yes

Appendixes

<u>HCNM Specific Recommendations.</u>	<u>OSCE Principle(s) Referenced</u>	<u>Imple-mented?</u>	<u>Observable Effect(s) on Security?</u>
<p><b>I-6. Naturalization and Full Equality: An Official Policy of Integration.</b></p> <p>1. Aim to integrate the non-Estonian population by a deliberate policy of facilitating the chances of acquiring Estonian citizenship for those who express such a wish, and of assuring them full equality with Estonian citizens, to include:</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>—Develop and implement an official policy of integration. (April 6, 1993)</li> <li>—Enhance efforts to aid non-Estonians in acquiring a reasonable level of Estonian. (April 6, 1993)</li> <li>—Use other governments’ help in language education. (March 9, 1994)</li> <li>—Increase the use of mass media, in particular television, to help non-Estonians learn Estonian. (April 6, 1993)</li> <li>—Study the language education system in the city of Kohtla-Jaerve with a view to its possible implementation elsewhere in Estonia. (April 6, 1993)</li> <li>—Speed up preparing the Language Strategy Document, and give it top priority. (May 21, 1997)</li> <li>—Include at least one Russian member, with experience in this field, in the Working Group drawing up the language strategy for the Language Training Center. (May 21, 1997)</li> </ul>	<p>10, 12, 14, 13 implied</p> <p>10, 12</p> <p>4</p> <p>10, 12</p> <p>10, 12</p> <p>10, 12</p> <p>10, 12</p>	<p>Yes</p> <p>Yes</p> <p>Yes</p> <p>Yes</p> <p>Yes</p> <p>Yes</p> <p>Yes</p>	<p>Yes</p> <p>Yes</p> <p>Yes</p> <p>Not observed</p> <p>Not observed</p> <p>Not observed</p> <p>Not observed</p>
<p><b>I-7. Full Equality: Mechanisms and Institutions.</b></p> <p>1. Implement a visible and consistent policy of dialogue and integration towards the non-Estonian population. (April 6, 1993)</p> <p>2. Establish a roundtable of noncitizens and ethnic minorities. (July 1, 1993)</p> <p>3. Establish an Office of a National Commissioner on Ethnic and Language Questions. (April 6, 1993)</p>	<p>12</p> <p>12</p> <p>12</p>	<p>In part</p> <p>Yes</p> <p>In part</p>	<p>Not observed</p> <p>Yes</p> <p>Yes</p>
<p><b>I-8. Full Equality: Alien Passports.</b></p> <p>1. Allow alien passports to residents who have the right to a residence permit in Estonia and are not citizens of another State. (July 1, 1993)</p> <p>2. Make alien passports available without complicated procedures or excessive costs. (March 9, 1994)</p>	<p>12</p> <p>10</p>	<p>In part</p> <p>In part</p>	<p>Yes</p> <p>Yes</p>
<p><b>I-9. Full Equality: Framework Convention for the Protection of National Minorities.</b></p> <p>1. Clarify that the intended reservation to the Council of Europe’s Framework Convention for the Protection of National Minorities does not mean that the government plans to restrict the rights of noncitizens living on its territory. (Oct. 28, 1996)</p>	<p>10</p>	<p>Yes</p>	<p>Yes</p>

## Appendixes

<u>HCNM Specific Recommendations.</u>	<u>OSCE Principle(s) Referenced</u>	<u>Imple-mented?</u>	<u>Observable Effect(s) on Security?</u>
<b>I-10. Full Equality: The Regulation of Language Use.</b> 1. Ensure that the Estonian language is not required in the internal affairs of private enterprises and organizations. (April 6, 1993) 2. Do not promulgate amendments requiring proficiency in the Estonian language in order to be a member of the parliament or a local governmental council. (April 22, 1996) 3. Follow the letter and spirit of the amended Law on Language, in particular as pertaining to the scope of application to public interests permissible under international law and in proportion to the legitimate aim sought. (June 15, 2000)	10, 13	Yes	Yes
	10, 13	Yes	Yes
	10, 13	Not observed	Not observed
<b><u>II. To Minorities.</u></b>  1. Adapt to and develop loyalty towards Estonia as an independent State. (April 6, 1993) 2. Contribute equally towards their own integration within Estonia. (April 6, 1993) 3. Make a determined effort to master Estonian to the extent of being able to conduct a simple conversation in Estonian, except for those who have retired from work. (April 6, 1993)	14	In part	Yes
	14	In part	Yes
	14	In part	Yes
<b><u>III. To Other OSCE States.</u></b>  <b>III-1. Recommendation to the Kinstate.</b> 1. Rapidly remove Russian troops from Estonia in line with the Helsinki Document, para. 15. (April 6, 1993)  <b>III-2. To Other OSCE States.</b> 1. Provide assistance to the Estonian government for language training. (March 9, 1994) 2. Recognize the Estonian Alien Passport as a legal travel document. (Feb. 14, 1996)	18	Yes	Yes
	4	Yes	Yes
	4	In part	Yes
	4	In part	Yes
	4	In part	Yes



## Appendixes

### **Formal Recommendations to the Estonian Government.**

1. Letter from OSCE HCNM Max van der Stoel to Mr. Trivimi Velliste, Minister for Foreign Affairs of the Republic of Estonia, April 6, 1993.
2. Letter from OSCE HCNM Max van der Stoel to Mr. Lennart Meri, President of the Republic of Estonia, July 1, 1993. With Statement of the High Commissioner on National Minorities, July 12, 1993.
3. Letter from OSCE HCNM Max van der Stoel to Mr. Jüri Luik, Minister for Foreign Affairs of Estonia, March 9, 1994.
4. Letter from OSCE HCNM Max van der Stoel to Mr. Jüri Luik, Minister for Foreign Affairs of the Republic of Estonia, December 8, 1994.
5. Letter from OSCE HCNM Max van der Stoel to Mr. Siim Kallas, Minister for Foreign Affairs of Estonia, December 11, 1995.
6. Letter from OSCE HCNM Max van der Stoel to the members of the OSCE Permanent Council, February 14, 1996.
7. Unpublished letter from OSCE HCNM Max van der Stoel to Mr. Lennart Meri, President of the Republic of Estonia, April 22, 1996. (See Kemp, *Quiet Diplomacy in Action*, 147.)
8. Letter from HCNM to Mr. Siim Kallas, Minister for Foreign Affairs of the Republic of Estonia, October 28, 1996.
9. Letter from OSCE HCNM Max van der Stoel to Mr. Toomas Hendrik Ilves, Minister for Foreign Affairs of the Republic of Estonia, May 21, 1997.
10. Unpublished letter from OSCE HCNM Max van der Stoel to Mr. Lennart Meri, President of the Republic of Estonia, December 19, 1998. (See Kemp, *Quiet Diplomacy in Action*, 150.)
11. Unpublished letter from OSCE HCNM Max van der Stoel to Mr. Toomas Hendrik Ilves, Minister for Foreign Affairs of the Republic of Estonia, March 26, 1999. (See Kemp, *Quiet Diplomacy in Action*, 151; *Annual Report 1999 on OSCE Activities*, 1999, 52–53.)
12. Unpublished letter from OSCE HCNM Max van der Stoel to Mr. Toomas Hendrik Ilves, Minister for Foreign Affairs of the Republic of Estonia, July 12, 1999. (See Kemp, *Quiet Diplomacy in Action*, 152.)
13. OSCE Press Release, “Statement Regarding the Adoption of Amendments to the Law on Language by the Estonian Parliament,” June 15, 2000.

Appendixes

**Appendix G. HCNM Recommendations to Macedonia**

<u><b>HCNM Specific Recommendations.</b></u>	<u><b>OSCE Principle(s) Referenced</b></u>	<u><b>Implemented?</b></u>	<u><b>Observable Effect(s) on Security?</b></u>
<p><b><u>I. Minority Participation in Public Affairs.</u></b></p> <p><b><u>1. Census.</u></b>  <i>Macedonian government:</i> Submit a draft law on the census to parliament without delay. (Nov. 1, 1993)</p>	10	Yes	Yes
<p><b><u>2. Citizenship.</u></b>  <i>Macedonian government:</i> Reduce the citizenship residency requirement from fifteen to five years. (Nov. 16, 1994)</p>	10	No	Yes
<p><b><u>3. Local self-government.</u></b></p> <p><b><i>1) Macedonian government:</i></b> Resubmit the July 1993 draft law on local self-government to the newly elected parliament, in particular because articles 79, 80, 81, and 82 contain provisions for the official use of the languages and alphabets of ethnic nationalities in units of local self-government in which there is a majority or a significant number. (Nov. 16, 1994)</p> <p><b><i>2) Macedonian government:</i></b> Ensure, within the areas of their responsibilities, the most efficient functioning of local self-government, and with a spirit that reflects the constitutional legal provisions and in addition, perform the following:</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>—improve the system of collecting local taxes, and ensure that financial resources from the State budget, aimed at supporting units of local government, are promptly transferred to them in accordance with existing legal regulations;</li> <li>—analyze how the practical implementation and execution of powers of local government in areas as mentioned in Article 115 of the Constitution could be improved and strengthened, and continue comprehensive cooperation on the matter between the relevant authorities and the specialized organs of the Council of Europe; and</li> <li>—strengthen the Macedonian Association of Local Self-Government Units, established in conformity with Article 10 of the Law on Local Self-Government, and use as a forum for exchanges of experiences and for developing a meaningful relationship between self-government units, and between them and the central government. (Nov. 9, 1998)</li> </ul>	10, 12	Yes	Not observed
	10, 12	No	Not observed

Appendixes

<b><u>HCNM Specific Recommendations.</u></b>	<b><u>OSCE Principle(s) Referenced</u></b>	<b><u>Implemented?</u></b>	<b><u>Observable Effect(s) on Security?</u></b>
<p><b><u>4. Electoral processes.</u></b>  <i>Macedonian government:</i> Take steps to remedy some of the weaknesses in the electoral process that became evident in the recent elections, to include:  —make a special effort to increase the accuracy of the electoral lists and ensure their permanent updating;  —resubmit the draft law on elections to the newly elected parliament, which would also include the partial introduction of a system of proportional representation; and  —revise the borders of constituencies in such a way as to ensure that each electoral district encompasses a roughly equal number of voters. (Nov. 16, 1994)</p>	10, 12	In part	Not observed
<p><b><u>5. Minority participation in public service.</u></b>  <i>Macedonian government:</i> Ensure, through the progressive process already underway, that the staffing of all government departments, to include the military and the police at all levels, adequately reflects the recognized nationalities. (Nov. 1, 1993)</p>	10, 12	In part	Yes
<p><b><u>II. Albanian-language Education.</u></b>  <b><u>1. Albanian teacher training.</u></b>  <i>Macedonian government:</i> Ensure that an adequate number of Albanian teachers receive a proper training at the required level. (Nov. 1, 1993)</p>	10, 12	In part	Yes
<p><b><u>2. Access to secondary school.</u></b>  <i>Macedonian government:</i> Promote greater access to high school for Albanian students. (Nov. 1, 1993)</p>	10, 12	Yes	Not observed
<p><b><u>3. Framework in which to seek solutions for questions involving Albanian-language higher education.</u></b>  <i>Majority and Minority:</i> Seek and find solutions to questions regarding higher education in the framework of full respect for the constitutional order of Macedonia, conduct dialogue on these subjects in the framework of the preparation of the law on higher education, and find a compromise formula regarding a new university on the basis of the following premises:  —any further step towards creating a new institution of higher education must be in accordance with the constitutional order, and conform with OSCE principles;  —the institution must have the purpose to contribute to interethnic harmony;  —the institution must respond to specific educational needs; and  —all population groups in the country ought to benefit from its creation. (April 28, 1995)</p>	11, 13, 15, 16, 20	Yes	Yes

Appendixes

<u>HCNM Specific Recommendations.</u>	<u>OSCE Principle(s) Referenced</u>	<u>Imple-mented?</u>	<u>Observable Effect(s) on Security?</u>
<p><b><u>4. A new, private, Albanian-language institute of higher learning.</u></b>  <i>Macedonian government:</i> Establish a private, Albanian-language institute of higher education. (April 28, 1995)</p> <p><i>OSCE States:</i> Provide international assistance to realize the plan for a private, Albanian-language institute of higher education. (Nov. 9, 1998)</p>	<p>10, 12</p> <p>4</p>	<p>No</p> <p>Yes</p>	<p>Yes</p> <p>Yes</p>
<p><b><u>III. Mechanisms for Dialogue.</u></b></p> <p><b><u>1. Council for Inter-Ethnic Relations.</u></b>  <i>Macedonian government:</i> Give the Council for Inter-Ethnic Relations the responsibility to analyze ways to promote interethnic harmony and initiate investigations of events that have led to interethnic tensions; provide the Council with an adequate staff to perform these additional responsibilities; and provide, for review, annual progress reports regarding minority staffing of the military, police at all levels, and all government departments. (Nov. 1, 1993)</p>	<p>12</p>	<p>No</p>	<p>Not observed</p>
<p><b><u>IV. Minority Access to the Media.</u></b></p> <p><b><u>1. Access to television.</u></b>  <i>Macedonian government:</i> Increase TV programs in the Albanian language from one to two hours per day as an interim measure, with a further substantial increase. (Nov. 16, 1994)</p>	<p>12</p>	<p>Yes</p>	<p>Yes</p>
<p><b><u>V. Framework in Which to Seek Solutions to Issues Involving Interethnic Tensions.</u></b></p> <p><b><u>1. Framework.</u></b>  <i>1) Majority and minority:</i> Strive to find solutions for interethnic problems by rejecting ethnic hatred and intolerance and by seeking constructive and continuous dialogue (with equal rights for all ethnic groups as the guiding principle), and base this dialogue on internationally accepted norms and standards, and equally on respect for the sovereignty and territorial integrity of the State, and respect for the constitutional order and the rule of law. (July 13, 1997)</p> <p><i>2) Majority and minority:</i> Recognize, as specific interests are pursued, that all groups have common interests such as the maintenance of peace and stability, the promotion of economic development, and the reduction of unemployment. (Nov. 9, 1998)</p>	<p>2, 11, 12, 16, 20</p> <p>19, 20</p>	<p>In part</p> <p>In part</p>	<p>Yes</p> <p>Yes</p>

## Appendixes

<u>HCNM Specific Recommendations.</u>	<u>OSCE Principle(s) Referenced</u>	<u>Implemented?</u>	<u>Observable Effect(s) on Security?</u>
<p><b>3) Majority and minority:</b> Respect the territorial integrity of the State and the constitutional order, including that it can only be changed in accordance with constitutional rules, and recognize that disregarding these basic rules will inevitably lead to destabilization of the State, and quite possibly to violence from which all concerned would suffer and no one would gain. (Nov. 9, 1998)</p>	2, 8, 11	No	Yes
<p><b>4) Majority and minority:</b> Move beyond the discussion between the Macedonian parties that favor the present unitary state system, and the Albanian parties that want to change it, and engage in a serious dialogue regarding the steps that can be taken to accommodate the specific desiderata of minorities, and find, through discussions on future government programs, solutions acceptable to both sides regarding a number of interethnic questions that have been the subject of discussion for many years, within the following framework:</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>—in accordance with the commitments accepted when Macedonia joined the OSCE and became a party to a number of international agreements in the framework of the UN and the Council of Europe; and</li> <li>—that the discussion take into account that the essence of democracy is compromise in that both sides have to modify some of their positions: in a democratic multiethnic State a minority cannot impose a dictate on a majority, but neither can a majority afford to ignore the desiderata of a minority, particularly when it constitutes an important percentage of the population. (Nov. 9, 1998)</li> </ul>	11, 12, 13, 14, 20	In part	Yes
<p><b>5) Macedonian government and all Macedonian parties:</b> Avoid considering any concession to a minority as a weakening of the State, and recognize that meeting the wishes of a minority, within the constitutional framework of a unitary State, may strengthen the State. (Nov. 9, 1998)</p>	10, 12, 13, 16	In part	Yes

Appendixes

<u>HCNM Specific Recommendations.</u>	<u>OSCE Principle(s) Referenced</u>	<u>Implemented?</u>	<u>Observable Effect(s) on Security?</u>
<p><b><u>VI. The Maintenance of Stability.</u></b></p> <p><b><u>1. Maintain national stability.</u></b>  <i>Macedonian government:</i> Maintain the stability of the country. (Nov. 16, 1994)</p> <p><b><u>2. Maintain stability during the refugee crisis.</u></b>  <i>Majority and minority:</i> Do their utmost to ensure that the massive influx of refugees from Kosovo does not lead to a destabilization of Macedonia. (May 12, 1999)</p> <p><b><u>3. Maintain stability during the 2001 crisis.</u></b>  <i>Majority and minority:</i> Avoid armed conflict. (March 15, 2001)</p>	<p>8, 10</p> <p>8, 10, 14</p> <p>8, 10, 14, 16</p>	<p>In part</p> <p>Yes</p> <p>Yes: 1993–2000; No: 2001</p>	<p>Yes</p> <p>Yes</p> <p>Yes</p>
<p><b><u>VII. International Assistance.</u></b></p> <p><b><u>1. Aid for economic recovery.</u></b>  <i>OSCE States:</i> Offer sufficient assistance to enable Macedonia to start a process of economic recovery. (Nov. 16, 1994)</p> <p><b><u>2. Aid for projects to promote interethnic harmony.</u></b>  <i>OSCE States:</i> Provide international assistance to enable the study of new subjects such as civic education and human rights (particularly so that students of Macedonian and Albanian ethnicity may study these subjects in common), and enable the conduct of summer camps for students of different ethnicity—and all combined with courses aimed at promoting integration. (Nov. 9, 1998) (Note: The HCNM also referenced NGOs as possible donors.)</p> <p><b><u>3. Aid for the refugee crisis.</u></b>  <i>OSCE States:</i> Significantly increase efforts to help Macedonia avoid destabilization from the massive influx of refugees from Kosovo (which caused an increase of the population of the FYROM of more than 10 percent within a few weeks). (May 12, 1999)</p>	<p>4</p> <p>4</p> <p>4</p>	<p>In part</p> <p>In part</p> <p>Yes</p>	<p>Not observed</p> <p>Yes</p> <p>Yes</p>
<p><b><u>VIII. International Relations.</u></b></p> <p><b><u>1. Normalization of Greek-Macedonian relations.</u></b>  <i>OSCE States—Macedonia and Greece:</i> Find ways to normalize relations, to include ending the embargo. (Nov. 16, 1994)</p>	<p>4, 6, 8</p>	<p>In part</p>	<p>Yes</p>

## Appendixes

### **Formal Recommendations to the Macedonia Government.**

1. Letter from OSCE HCNM Max van der Stoel to Mr. Stevo Crvenkovski, Minister for Foreign Relations of the FYROM, November 1, 1993.
2. Letter from OSCE HCNM Max van der Stoel to Mr. Stevo Crvenkovski, Minister for Foreign Relations of the FYROM, November 16, 1994.
3. Letter from OSCE HCNM Max van der Stoel to Mr. Stevo Crvenkovski, Minister for Foreign Relations of the FYROM, April 28, 1995.
4. OSCE Press Release, “Statement on Events in the former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia by the OSCE High Commissioner on National Minorities,” July 13, 1997. See also *Report of the High Commissioner on National Minorities Regarding His Visit to the FRY of Macedonia 10–13 July 1997*, July 16, 1997.
5. OSCE Press Release, “Inter-ethnic Relations Need Further Attention in the former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia,” November 9, 1998.
6. OSCE Press Release, “OSCE High Commissioner on National Minorities Addresses Permanent Council,” May 12, 1999.
7. OSCE Press Release, “Violence a Threat to Peace and Stability in the former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia,” March 15, 2001.

## Selected Bibliography

This bibliography contains the primary sources used in the study.

- Ackermann, Alice. *Making Peace Prevail: Preventing Violent Conflict in Macedonia*. Syracuse: Syracuse University Press, 2000.
- . "Managing Conflicts Non-Violently Through Preventive Action: The Case of the Former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia." *Journal of Conflict Studies* 19, no. 1 (Spring 1999).
- . "On the Razor's Edge: Macedonia Ten Years after Independence." In *OSCE Yearbook 2001*, edited by the Institute for Peace Research and Security Policy (IFSH), 117–135. Baden-Baden: Nomos Verlagsgesellschaft, 2002.
- . "The Republic of Macedonia and the OSCE." In *OSCE Yearbook 1997*, edited by the Institute for Peace Research and Security Policy (IFSH), 69–75. Baden-Baden: Nomos Verlagsgesellschaft, 1998.
- Adler, Emanuel. "Seeds of Peaceful Change: The OSCE's Security Community-building Model." In *Security Communities*, edited by Emanuel Adler and Michael Barnett, 119–160. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1998.
- Anderson, Norman. "OSCE Preventive Diplomacy in the former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia." *Helsinki Monitor* 10, no. 2 (1999): 49–64.
- Austrian Study Center for Peace and Conflict Resolution. *Report on the Summer Academy on OSCE*. Vienna: 2003.
- Bajarnas, Eitvidas, Mare Haab, and Ilmars Viskne. *The Baltic States: Security and Defence After Independence*. Chaillot Paper 19. Paris: Institute for Security Studies Western European Union, June 1995.
- Birckenbach, Hanne-Margret. *Half Full or Half Empty? The OSCE Mission to Estonia and Its Balance Sheet 1993–1999*. ECMI Working Paper 6. Flensburg: European Centre for Minority Issues, 2000.
- Bloed, Arie, ed. *The Challenges of Change: The Helsinki Summit of the CSCE and Its Aftermath*. Dordrecht: Martinus Nijhoff, 1994.
- . *The Conference on Security and Co-operation in Europe: Analysis and Basic Documents, 1972–1993*. Dordrecht: Kluwer, 1993.
- . *The Conference on Security and Co-operation in Europe: Basic Documents: 1993–1995*. The Hague: Martinus Nijhoff, 1997.
- Bowman, Steve. *Kosovo and Macedonia: U.S. and Allied Military Operations*. CRS Report IB10027. Washington, DC: Congressional Research Service, Nov. 13, 2001.
- Brenninkmeijer, Olivier A. J. *The OSCE High Commissioner on National Minorities: Negotiating the 1992 Conflict Prevention Mandate*. PSIO Occasional Paper 5/2005. Geneva: Program for the Study of International Organizations, 2005.
- Brown, Michael E. and Richard N. Rosecrance, eds. *The Costs of Conflict: Prevention and Cure in the Global Arena*. Carnegie Commission on Preventing Deadly Conflict. Lanham, MD: Rowman & Littlefield, 1999.



## Selected Bibliography

- Buchsbaum, Thomas M. "OSCE's Comprehensive Security: Integrating the Three Dimensions." In *Challenges Faced by the OSCE During 2001*, edited by Daniel Warner and Valérie Clerc, 71–150. PSIO Occasional Paper 2/2002. Geneva: Program for the Study of International Organizations, 2002.
- Buergenthal, Thomas. "The CSCE Rights System." *CSCE ODIHR Bulletin* 1, no. 3 (Autumn 1993): 7–9.
- . "The CSCE Rights System." *George Washington Journal of International Law and Economics* 25, no. 2 (1991): 333–386.
- . "The Helsinki Process: Birth of a Human Rights System." In *Human Rights in the World Community*, edited by Richard Pierre Claude and Burns H. Weston, 256–268. Philadelphia: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1992.
- . "The Normative and Institutional Evolution of International Human Rights." *Human Rights Quarterly* 19, no. 4 (1997): 703–723.
- Buergenthal, Thomas, ed. *Human Rights, International Law and the Helsinki Accord*. Montclair, NJ: Allanheld, Osmun and Co., 1977.
- Büscher, Klemens. "The Missions to the Republic of Moldova and the Ukraine: A Double-Entry Balance Sheet." In *OSCE Yearbook 1999*, edited by the Institute for Peace Research and Security Policy (IFSH), 195–210. Baden-Baden: Nomos Verlagsgesellschaft, 2000.
- Carter, Ashton B., William J. Perry, and John D. Steinbruner. *A New Concept of Cooperative Security*. Washington, DC: Brookings Institution, 1992.
- Carter, Jimmy. *Keeping Faith: Memoirs of a President*. New York: Bantam Books, 1982.
- Center for International Development and Conflict Management (CIDCM). "Consolidated State Failure Events, 1955–2001." [www.cidcm.umd.edu/inscr/stfail/sftable.htm](http://www.cidcm.umd.edu/inscr/stfail/sftable.htm) (March 21, 2004).
- . "Current Status of the World's Major Episodes of Political Violence." <http://members.aol.com/CSPmngm/current.htm> (Sept. 23, 2003).
- . "Major Episodes of Political Violence 1946–2002." <http://members.aol.com/CSPmngm/warlist.htm> (March 21, 2004).
- Centre for OSCE Research (CORE). *OSCE Bibliography*. [www.core-hamburg.de/CORE\\_english/ress\\_biblio.htm](http://www.core-hamburg.de/CORE_english/ress_biblio.htm) (Jan. 13, 2005).
- Commission on Security and Cooperation in Europe (the U.S. Helsinki Commission). "The Commission on Security and Cooperation in Europe." [www.house.gov/csce/aboutcsce.htm](http://www.house.gov/csce/aboutcsce.htm) (April 23, 1999).
- . *Fulfilling Our Promises: The United States and the Helsinki Final Act: A Status Report*. Washington, DC: 1979.
- Curtis, Glenn E., ed. *Russia: A Country Study*. Washington, DC: Library of Congress, 1998.
- . *Yugoslavia: A Country Study*. 3rd ed. Washington, DC: Library of Congress, 1992.
- Daftary, Farimah. "Conflict Resolution in FYR Macedonia: Power-sharing or the 'Civic Approach?'" *Helsinki Monitor* 12, no. 4 (2001): 291–312.
- De Vito, Ugo. "Vade Mecum: An Introduction to the 'Organization for Security and Cooperation in Europe.'" Zurich: Center for Security Studies and Conflict Research, 1996.
- [www.ssn.ethz.ch/static/osce/osce\\_vae.htm](http://www.ssn.ethz.ch/static/osce/osce_vae.htm) (March 20, 2007).
- Dewitt, David. "Common, Comprehensive, and Cooperative Security." *Pacific Review* 7, no. 1 (1994): 1–15.

## Selected Bibliography

- Drohobycky, Maria, ed. *Crimea: Dynamics, Challenges, and Prospects*. Lanham, MD: Rowman & Littlefield, 1995.
- . *Managing Ethnic Tension in the Post-Soviet Space: The Examples of Kazakhstan and Ukraine*. Washington, DC: American Association for the Advancement of Science, 1995.
- Estonian government: "Citizenship. 16 February 2006." [www.vm.ee/estonia/kat\\_399/pea\\_172/4518.html](http://www.vm.ee/estonia/kat_399/pea_172/4518.html) (March 14, 2006).
- . "Citizenship and Nationality. 27 September 2002." [www.vm.ee/estonia/kat\\_509/pea\\_172/2868](http://www.vm.ee/estonia/kat_509/pea_172/2868) (Feb. 1, 2003).
- . *Implementation of the State Programme "Integration in Estonian Society 2000–2007."* 2001.
- . "June 14: A National Day of Commemoration." [www.vm.ee/estonia/kat\\_509/pea\\_172/991.html](http://www.vm.ee/estonia/kat_509/pea_172/991.html) (March 14, 2006).
- . "Population by Nationality. 24 May 2004." [www.vm.ee/estonia/kat\\_399/pea\\_172/4305.html](http://www.vm.ee/estonia/kat_399/pea_172/4305.html) (March 14, 2006).
- . *The State Programme "Integration in Estonian Society 2000–2007."* Executive Summary. 2000. [www.riik.ee/saks/ikomisjon](http://www.riik.ee/saks/ikomisjon) (Feb. 28, 2007).
- . "25 March 1949." [www.vm.ee/estonia/kat\\_509/pea\\_172/4365.html](http://www.vm.ee/estonia/kat_509/pea_172/4365.html) (March 14, 2006).
- European Commission of the European Union (on Estonia). *Agenda 2000: Commission Opinion on Estonia's Application for Membership of the European Union*. Brussels: 1997.
- . *Regular Report on Estonia's Progress Towards Accession*. [1998].
- . *1999 Regular Report on Estonia's Progress Towards Accession*.
- . *2000 Regular Report from the Commission on Estonia's Progress Towards Accession*.
- . *2001 Regular Report on Estonia's Progress Towards Accession*.
- . *2002 Regular Report on Estonia's Progress Towards Accession*.
- . *Comprehensive Monitoring Report on Estonia's Preparation for Membership*. 2003.
- European Commission of the European Union (on Macedonia). *Former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia Stabilisation and Association Report*. Commission Staff Working Paper, 2002.
- . *Former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia Stabilisation and Association Report 2003*. Commission Staff Working Paper, 2003.
- . *Former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia Stabilisation and Association Report 2004*. Commission Staff Working Paper, 2004.
- . *Analytical Report for the Opinion on the Application from the former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia for EU Membership*. Brussels: 2005.
- . *Commission Opinion on the Application from the former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia for Membership of the European Union*. 2005. <http://eur-lex.Europe.eu> (Feb. 11, 2007).
- Evans, Gareth. *Cooperating for Peace: The Global Agenda for the 1990s and Beyond*. St Leonards, Australia: Allen & Unwin, 1993.
- Evers, Frank, Martin Kahl, and Wolfgang Zellner. *The Culture of Dialogue: The OSCE Acquis 30 Years After Helsinki*. Hamburg: Centre for OSCE Research, 2005.
- Ford, Gerald. Address at the Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe, Aug. 1, 1975.
- . *A Time to Heal: The Autobiography of Gerald R. Ford*. New York: Harper & Row, 1979.

## Selected Bibliography

- Foundation on Inter-Ethnic Relations (FIER). *Bibliography on the OSCE High Commissioner on National Minorities: Documents, Speeches and Related Publications*, 3rd ed. The Hague: 1997.
- . *The Hague Recommendations Regarding the Education Rights of National Minorities & Explanatory Note*. The Hague: 1996.
- . *The Lund Recommendations on the Effective Participation of National Minorities in Public Life & Explanatory Note*. The Hague: 1999.
- . *The Oslo Recommendations Regarding the Linguistic Rights of National Minorities & Explanatory Note*. The Hague: 1998.
- Frowick, Robert. "Three Personal Experiences in the Field of Preventive Diplomacy," in *Preventive Diplomacy: The United Nations and the OSCE*, edited by Daniel Warner, 9–18. PSIO Occasional Paper 1/1996. Geneva: Program for the Study of International Organizations, 1996.
- Fry, John. *The Helsinki Process: Negotiating Security and Cooperation in Europe*. Washington, DC: National Defense University Press, 1993.
- Gaddis, John Lewis. "Order versus Justice: An American Foreign Policy Dilemma." In *Order and Justice in International Relations*, edited by Rosemary Foot, John Lewis Gaddis, and Andrew Hurrell, 155–175. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 2003.
- Garthoff, Raymond L. *Détente and Confrontation: American-Soviet Relations from Nixon to Reagan*. Washington, DC: Brookings, 1985.
- Geistlinger, Michael and Aksel Kirch. *Estonia: A New Framework for the Estonian Majority and the Russian Minority*. Vienna: Braumüller, 1995.
- Ghebali, Victor-Yves, Hrair Balian, and Romaine Morard, eds. *Proceedings GCSP/HEI Workshop 30th Anniversary of the Launching of the CSCE Process*. PSIO Occasional Paper 3/2003. Geneva: Program for the Study of International Organizations, 2002.
- Gorbachev, Mikhail. *Perestroika: New Thinking for Our Country and the World*. New York: Harper & Row, 1987.
- . "Speech by Soviet President Mikhail Gorbachev to the Second Summit of CSCE Heads of State or Government." Nov. 1990.
- Gurr, Ted Robert, Monty G. Marshall, and Deepa Khosla. *Peace and Conflict 2001: A Global Survey of Armed Conflicts, Self-Determination Movements, and Democracy*. Center for International Development and Conflict Management (CIDCM). College Park, MD: University of Maryland, 2000.
- Hazewinkel, Harm J. "Ottawa: 1985—The Half-way Meeting—Recollections of a Participant." Special Issue, *OSCE ODIHR Bulletin* 3, no. 3 (Fall 1995): 41–47.
- Heraclides, Alexis. *Helsinki-II and Its Aftermath: The Making of the CSCE into an International Organization*. London: Pinter, 1993.
- Hope, Nicholas. "Interwar Statehood: Symbol and Reality." In *The Baltic States: The National Self-Determination of Estonia, Latvia and Lithuania*, edited by Graham Smith, 41–68. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1994.
- Hoyneck, Wilhelm. "From the CSCE to the OSCE: The Challenges of Building New Stability." *Helsinki Monitor* 6, no. 3 (1995): 11–22.
- . "The OSCE in Mid-1996: Stock-Taking and Prospects." In *OSCE Yearbook 1995–1996*, edited by the Institute for Peace Research and Security Policy (IFSH), 69–75. Baden-Baden: Nomos Verlagsgesellschaft, 1997.

## Selected Bibliography

- Human Rights Watch. *Macedonia: Police Violence in Macedonia*. www.hrw.org (March 13, 2006).  
----. *A Threat to "Stability": Human Rights Violations in Macedonia*. 1996.
- Independent International Commission on Kosovo. *The Kosovo Report*.  
www.reliefweb.int/library/documents/thekosovoreport.htm (March 16, 2007).
- International Crisis Group. *The Albanian Question in Macedonia: Implications of the Kosovo Conflict for Inter-Ethnic Relations in Macedonia*. ICG Balkans Report 38, Aug. 11, 1998.  
----. *Macedonia Report: The Politics of Ethnicity and Conflict*. 1997.  
----. *Macedonia's Ethnic Albanians: Bridging the Gulf*. ICG Balkans Report 98. Aug. 2, 2000.  
----. *The Macedonian Question: Reform or Rebellion*. ICG Balkans Report 109. April 5, 2001.  
----. *Macedonia: Still Sliding*. Balkans Briefing. July 27, 2001.
- International Helsinki Federation for Human Rights. *Fact Finding Mission to Macedonia 27–28 May 2002*.  
----. *Macedonia*. www.ihr-hr.org/viewbinary/viewdocument.php?doc\_id=5528 (March 1, 2007).
- Iwaskiw, Walter R. *Estonia, Latvia, and Lithuania: Country Studies*. Lanham, MD: Library of Congress, 1996.
- Kemp, Walter A. "Between Assimilation and Secession: Integrating Diversity in Multi-Ethnic States." In *The OSCE in the Landscape of European Security (2000)*, edited by Daniel Warner and Valérie Clerc, 37–67. PSIO Occasional Paper 1/2002. Geneva: Program for the Study of International Organizations, 2002.  
----. *Nationalism and Communism in Eastern Europe and the Soviet Union: A Basic Contradiction?* London: Macmillan Press, 1999.  
----. *The OSCE in a New Context: European Security Towards the Twenty-first Century*. Discussion Paper 64. London: Royal Institute of International Affairs, 1996.  
----. "Profiting from Instability: Crime, Corruption and Inter-Ethnic Conflict." In *New Security Threats and Challenges within the OSCE Region*, edited by Victor-Yves Ghebali and Daniel Warner, 49–73. PSIO Occasional Paper 1/2003. Geneva: Program for the Study of International Organizations, 2003.  
----. "South East European University Opens in former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia." *OSCE Newsletter* 8, no. 10 (Nov.–Dec. 2001): 8.
- Kemp, Walter A., ed. *Quiet Diplomacy in Action: The OSCE High Commissioner on National Minorities*. The Hague: Kluwer Law International, 2001.
- Kim, Julie. *Macedonia: Country Background and Recent Conflict*. CRS Report RL30900, Washington, DC: Congressional Research Service, Nov. 7, 2001.  
----. *Macedonia (FYROM): Post-Conflict Situation and U.S. Policy*. CRS Report RL32172. Washington, DC: Congressional Research Service, June 17, 2005.  
----. *Macedonian-Albanian Ethnic Tensions: Chronology of the Confrontation in Tetovo*. CRS Report 95-381F. Washington, DC: Congressional Research Service, March 13, 1995.
- Kim, Julie, and Carol Migdalovitz. "Macedonia": (*Skopje*) *Recognition and Conflict Prevention*. CRS Report 93-69F. Washington, DC: Congressional Research Service, Jan. 11, 1993 (Technical revisions as of Nov. 17, 1993).  
----. *Macedonia: Former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia Situation Update*. CRS Report 94-148F. Washington, DC: Congressional Research Service, Feb. 18, 1994.
- Kissinger, Henry. *Years of Renewal*. New York: Simon & Schuster, 1999.

## Selected Bibliography

- Korey, William. *NGOs and the Universal Declaration of Human Rights*. New York, St. Martin's Press, 1998.
- . *The Promises We Keep: Human Rights, the Helsinki Process, and American Foreign Policy*. New York: St. Martin's Press, 1993.
- . "The Unanticipated Consequences of Helsinki." Special Issue, *OSCE ODIHR Bulletin* 3, no. 3 (Fall 1995): 8–14.
- Kosovo Forum. *Macedonian Casualties and Human Rights Violations by the UCK in Macedonia*. [www.kosovoforum.net/MaceConflict.htm](http://www.kosovoforum.net/MaceConflict.htm) (Nov. 29, 2002).
- Kulyk, Volodymyr. *Revisiting a Success Story: Implementation of the Recommendations of the OSCE High Commissioner on National Minorities to Ukraine, 1994–2001*. CORE Working Paper 6. Hamburg: Centre for OSCE Research, 2002.
- Laar, Mart. *War in the Woods: Estonia's Struggle for Survival 1944–1956*. Washington, DC: Compass Press, 1992.
- Lehne, Stefan. *The Vienna Meeting of the Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe, 1986–1989: A Turning Point in East-West Relations*. Boulder: Westview Press, 1991.
- Macedonian government. "Macedonia in Figures," [www.stat.gov.mk](http://www.stat.gov.mk) (Feb. 14, 2007).
- Machl, Sabine. "The OSCE Missions to the Baltic States." In *OSCE Yearbook 2002*, edited by the Institute for Peace Research and Security Policy (IFSH), 209–218. Baden-Baden: Nomos Verlagsgesellschaft, 2003.
- Magocsi, Paul Robert. *A History of Ukraine*. Seattle: University of Washington Press, 1996.
- Magstadt, Thomas. *Ethics and Emigration: The East German Exodus, 1989*. Case 506, Washington: Institute for the Study of Diplomacy, 1990.
- Maresca, John J. "Ensuring CSCE Promises Are Kept." Special Issue, *OSCE ODIHR Bulletin* 3, no. 3 (Fall 1995): 31–34.
- . *To Helsinki: The Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe 1973–1975*. [Durham]: Duke University Press, 1985.
- Mastny, Vojtech. *Helsinki, Human Rights, and European Security: Analysis and Documentation*. Durham: Duke University Press, 1986.
- . *The Helsinki Process and the Reintegration of Europe, 1986–1991: Analysis and Documentation*. New York: New York University Press, 1992.
- "Memorandum of Conversation," Aug. 8, 1975, Gerald Ford Cabinet Meeting.
- Memorial for the Prevention of Terrorism (MIPT). MIPT Terrorism Knowledge Base. [www.mipt.org](http://www.mipt.org) (March 1, 2007).
- Minorities at Risk (MARS). *Chronology for Albanians in Macedonia; Chronology for Russians in Estonia; and Chronology for Crimean Russians in Ukraine*. [www.cidcm.umd.edu](http://www.cidcm.umd.edu) (Aug. 15, 2006).
- Nordberg, Erkki. *The Baltic Republics: A Strategic Survey*. Finnish Defence Studies 6. Helsinki: National Defence College, 1994. [Date printed as "1992."]
- North Atlantic Treaty Organization (NATO). *NATO Handbook*. Brussels: NATO Office of Information and Press, 1992.

## Selected Bibliography

Organization for Security and Cooperation in Europe (OSCE).

OSCE Documents (Chronological Order).

----. *Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe: Stage I—Helsinki. Verbatim Records July 3–7, 1973.*

----. *Final Recommendations of the Helsinki Consultations.* 1973.

----. *Helsinki Final Act (Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe Final Act).* 1975. (Also referred to as the “Helsinki Accords.”)

----. *Belgrade Document (Concluding Document of the Belgrade Meeting).* 1978.

----. *Madrid Document (Concluding Document of the Madrid Meeting).* 1983.

----. *Vienna Document (Concluding Document of the Vienna Meeting).* 1989.

----. *Bonn Document (Document of the Bonn Conference).* 1990.

----. *Copenhagen Document (Document of the Copenhagen Meeting of the Conference on the Human Dimension of the CSCE).* 1990

----. *Charter of Paris (Charter of Paris for a New Europe).* 1990.

----. *Cracow Document (Document of the Cracow Symposium on the Cultural Heritage of the CSCE Participating States).* 1991.

----. *Report of the CSCE Meeting of Experts on National Minorities.* 1991.

----. *Moscow Document (Document of the Moscow Meeting of the Conference on the Human Dimension of the CSCE).* 1991.

----. *Helsinki Document (CSCE Helsinki Document 1992: The Challenges of Change).* 1992.

----. *Budapest Document (CSCE Budapest Document 1994: Towards a Genuine Partnership in a New Era).* 1994.

----. *Lisbon Document.* 1996.

----. *Istanbul Document.* 1999.

OSCE High Commissioner on National Minorities. *Report on the Linguistic Rights of Persons Belonging to National Minorities in the OSCE Area.* The Hague: 1999.

OSCE Office for Democratic Institutions and Human Rights (ODIHR). *OSCE Human Dimension Commitments: A Reference Guide.* Warsaw: 2001.

----. *Semi-Annual Reports and Annual Reports.* Warsaw: 1994–2002.

“OSCE Responds Quickly to Border Crisis in former Yugoslav Republic of Macedonia.” *OSCE Newsletter* 8, no. 4 (April 2001) 3–4.

OSCE Secretariat. “CSCE/OSCE Timeline.” [www.osce.org/item/15659.html](http://www.osce.org/item/15659.html) (May 9, 2007).

----. *From CSCE to OSCE: Statements and Speeches of Dr. William Hoynck, Secretary General of the OSCE (1993–1996).* Vienna: n.d.

----. “The Helsinki Process: From the CSCE to the OSCE.” [www.osce.org/e/history.htm](http://www.osce.org/e/history.htm) (April 30, 1999).

----. *OSCE Handbook.* 3rd ed. Vienna: 1999.

----. *The OSCE in 1995: The Year in Print.* Vienna, n.d.

----. *Survey of OSCE Long-Term Missions and Other OSCE Field Activities.*

----. *30 Years, 30 Opinions.* 2005.

## Selected Bibliography

- OSCE Secretary General, Organization for Security and Cooperation in Europe. *Annual Report on OSCE Activities*. Vienna: reports from 1992–2002.
- Packer, John. “Autonomy Within the OSCE: The Case of Crimea.” In *Autonomy: Applications and Implications*, edited by Markku Suksi, 295–316. The Hague: Kluwer Law International, 1998.
- . “The Role of the OSCE High Commissioner on National Minorities in the Former Yugoslavia.” *Cambridge Review of International Affairs* 12, no. 2 (Spring-Summer 1999): 168–183.
- Pentikäinen, Merja. “The 1997 Implementation Meeting on Human Dimension Issues of the OSCE.” *Helsinki Monitor* 9, no. 2 (1998): 18–38.
- Petroska-Beska, Violeta, and Mirjana Najcevska. *Macedonia: Understanding History, Preventing Future Conflict*. Washington, DC: United States Institute of Peace, 2004.
- Poleshchuk, Vadim. *Advice Not Welcomed: Recommendations of the OSCE High Commissioner to Estonia and Latvia and the Response*. Hamburg: Schleswig-Holstein Institute for Peace Research, 2001.
- Poulton, Hugh. *Who Are the Macedonians?* 2nd ed. Bloomington: Indiana University Press, 2000.
- Ratner, Steven R. “Does International Law Matter in Preventing Ethnic Conflict?” *New York University Journal of International Law and Politics* 32, no. 3 (Spring 2000): 591–698.
- Raun, Toivo U. *Estonia and the Estonians*. 2nd ed. Stanford: Hoover Institution Press, 2001.
- Rotfeld, Adam Daniel. “The CSCE Process and European Security.” In *Ten Years After Helsinki: The Making of the European Security Regime*, edited by Katti Möttöla, 17–29. Boulder: Westview, 1986.
- Sarv, Margit. *Integration by Reframing Legislation: Implementation of the Recommendations of the OSCE High Commissioner on National Minorities to Estonia, 1993–2001*. CORE Working Paper 7. Hamburg: Centre for OSCE Research, 2002.
- Scheffelin, Margaret Merrick. “Changes in Education in Eastern Germany During and After the *Wende*: An Example in Potsdam.” Paper presented at the 6th Triennial Conference of the Eastern German Studies Group, November 12–15, 1998, Montreal, Canada. Carmichael, CA: Visual Tutor Co., 1999.
- See University. “Welcome: About the University.” [www.see-university.com/english/index.asp](http://www.see-university.com/english/index.asp) (Jan. 22, 2004).
- Sen, Amartya. “Democracy as a Universal Value,” *Journal of Democracy* 10, no. 3 (1999).
- Shea, John. *Macedonia and Greece: The Struggle to Define a New Balkan Nation*. Jefferson, NC: McFarland, 1997.
- Shtromas, Aleksandras. “The Baltic States as Soviet Republics: Tensions and Contradictions.” In *The Baltic States: The National Self-Determination of Estonia, Latvia and Lithuania*, edited by Graham Smith, 86–117. New York: St. Martin’s Press, 1994.
- Shultz, George. “Address by U.S. Secretary of State George Shultz on the Tenth Anniversary of the Signing of the Helsinki Final Act.” Aug. 1, 1985.
- Simonsen, Sven Gunnar, ed. *Conflicts in the OSCE Area*. Oslo: Institute Peace Research Institute (PRIO), 1997.
- Smith, David J. *Estonia: Independence and European Integration*. London: Routledge, 2001.
- Smith, Graham, ed. *The Baltic States: The National Self-Determination of Estonia, Latvia and Lithuania*. New York: St. Martin’s Press, 1994.
- Sokalski, Henryk J. *An Ounce of Prevention: Macedonia and the UN Experience in Preventive Diplomacy*. Washington, DC: United States Institute of Peace Press, 2003.

## Selected Bibliography

- Solchanyk, Roman. *Ukraine and Russia: The Post-Soviet Transition*. Lanham, MD: Rowman & Littlefield, 2001.
- Stockholm International Peace Research Institute. *SIPRI Yearbook [1992–1996]*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1992–1996.
- Subtelny, Orest. *Ukraine: A History*. 3rd ed. Toronto: University of Toronto Press, 2000.
- Szporluk, Roman. *Russia, Ukraine, and the Breakup of the Soviet Union*. Stanford: Hoover Institution Press, 2000.
- Thomas, Daniel C. *The Helsinki Effect: International Norms, Human Rights, and the Demise of Communism*. Princeton: Princeton University Press, 2001.
- U.S. Central Intelligence Agency. *Intelligence Memorandum: Soviet Expectations of a European Security Conference*. Washington, DC: 1972.
- . *The World Factbook*. [www.cia.gov/](http://www.cia.gov/) and [www.theodora.com](http://www.theodora.com) (June 6, 2006).
- U.S. State Department. *Atlas of NATO*. Washington, DC: Feb. 1985.
- . “Background Notes.” [www.state.gov](http://www.state.gov) (Feb. 10, 2007).
- . “Fact Sheet: U.S. Support for Macedonia.” May 2, 2001. [www.usembassy.it](http://www.usembassy.it) (Jan. 23, 2007).
- . *Macedonia: Country Reports on Human Rights Practices*. 2001–2005.
- U.S. General Accounting Office. *Helsinki Commission: The First 8 Years*. Washington, DC: March 1, 1985.
- Van der Stoel, Max. Addresses, [www.osceprag.cz/inst/hcnm](http://www.osceprag.cz/inst/hcnm) (April 23, 1999).
- . Addresses in *Peace and Stability through Human and Minority Rights*, edited by Wolfgang Zellner and Falk Lange. Baden-Baden: Nomos Verlagsgesellschaft, 2001.
- . “OSCE: Looking Back and Looking Forward.” *Helsinki Monitor* 16, no. 3 (2005): 204–208.
- . “Principles and Pragmatism: Twenty-Five Years with the Helsinki Process.” In *OSCE Yearbook 2000*, edited by the Institute for Peace Research and Security Policy (IFSH), 25–33. Baden-Baden: Nomos Verlagsgesellschaft, 2000.
- . Recommendations to the Estonian Government.  
[www.osce.org/hcnm/recommendations/estonia/index.htm](http://www.osce.org/hcnm/recommendations/estonia/index.htm) (Nov. 23, 2000).
- . Recommendations to the Macedonia Government.  
[www.osce.org/hcnm/recommendations/fyrom/index.htm](http://www.osce.org/hcnm/recommendations/fyrom/index.htm) (Nov. 23, 2000).
- . Recommendations to the Ukrainian Government Regarding Crimea.  
[www.osce.org/hcnm/recommendations/ukraine/index.htm](http://www.osce.org/hcnm/recommendations/ukraine/index.htm) (Nov. 23, 2000).
- . “The South East European University in Macedonia.” In *OSCE Yearbook 2002*, edited by the Institute for Peace Research and Security Policy (IFSH), 181–185. Baden-Baden: Nomos Verlagsgesellschaft, 2003.
- Van Hal, Albert. “Back to the Future: The Referendum of November 7th in Macedonia.” *Helsinki Monitor* 16, no. 1 (2005): 36–53.
- Vetterlein, Merle. “The Influence of the Ohrid Framework Agreement on the Educational Policy of the Republic of Macedonia.” Paper presented at the 8th Annual Kokkalis Graduate Student Workshop, Feb. 3, 2006. Hamburg: Institute for Peace Research and Security Policy (IFSH), 2006.
- Williams, Abiodun. *Preventing War: The United Nations and Macedonia*. Lanham, MD: Rowman & Littlefield, 2000.



## Selected Bibliography

- Woehrel, Steven. *Russians in the Baltic States*. CRS Report 93-719F. Washington, DC: Congressional Research Service, Aug. 3, 1993.
- . *Ukraine: Current Issues and U.S. Policy*. CRS Report 96-245F. Washington, DC: Congressional Research Service, Sept. 21, 2000.
- . *Ukraine: Current Issues and U.S. Policy*. CRS Report RL33460. Washington, DC: Congressional Research Service, June 7, 2006.
- . *Ukraine: Nuclear Weapons and U.S. Interests*. CRS Report 94-253F. Washington, DC: Congressional Research Service, March 15, 1994.
- . *Ukraine's Uncertain Future and U.S. Policy*. CRS Report 94-738F. Washington, DC: Congressional Research Service, Sept. 21, 1994.
- Yamamoto, M. Merrick, comp. *Preventing Ethnic Conflict and Building Cohesive States: Memorable Words of Max van der Stoep, First OSCE High Commissioner on National Minorities from His Speeches 1992–2001*. Carmichael, CA: Visual Tutor Co., 2007.
- Zaagman, Rob. "Conflict Prevention in the Baltic Area: The OSCE High Commissioner on National Minorities in Estonia, 1993–1999." *Helsinki Monitor* 10, no. 3 (1999): 30–43.
- . *Conflict Prevention in the Baltic States: The OSCE High Commissioner on National Minorities in Estonia, Latvia and Lithuania*. ECMI Monograph 1. Flensburg: European Centre for Minority Issues, April 1999.
- . "The CSCE High Commissioner on National Minorities: An Analysis of the Mandate and the Institutional Context." In *The Challenges of Change: The Helsinki Summit of the CSCE and Its Aftermath*, edited by Arie Bloed, 113–175. Dordrecht: Martinus Nijhoff, 1994.
- Zaagman, Rob, and Hannie Zaal. "The CSCE High Commissioner on National Minorities: Prehistory and Negotiations." In *The Challenges of Change: The Helsinki Summit of the CSCE and Its Aftermath*, edited by Arie Bloed, 95–111. Dordrecht: Martinus Nijhoff, 1994.

## Index

- Ahmeti, Ali, 85  
Albania/ethnic Albanians, 71, 72, 80, 85, 92  
Albert, Carl, 14  
Belgrade follow-up meeting (1977–1978), 13, 15  
Berlin Wall, 8, 19  
Bern Meeting of Experts on Human Contacts (1986), 17  
Black Sea Fleet, 46, 47, 52, 55  
Bonn Document (1990), 19  
Brezhnev Doctrine, 11  
Bush, George W./Bush43 administration, 80, 81, 82  
Carter, Jimmy, 15  
Charter 77 (Czechoslovakia), 15  
Charter of Paris (1990), 1, 19, 21, 27, 30, 32, 34, 36, 41, 42  
Chernobyl nuclear power plant accident (1986), 46  
Cold War, 1, 8, 14, 17–19, 28, 42, 44  
common security (indivisible security), 32, 44, 87  
comprehensive security, 24, 30, 44, 87  
comprehensive, cooperative, and common security approach, 87  
Conference on Confidence- and Security-building Measures and Disarmament in Europe (1984), 16  
Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe (CSCE). *See* OSCE  
Conference on the Human Dimension of the CSCE (1989–1991), 3, 22, 43  
Confidence and Security-Building Measures (CSBMs), 13, 18, 33  
conflict prevention, 25, 33  
cooperative security, 32, 44, 87  
Copenhagen Document (1990), 1, 3, 19, 22, 26  
Council for Inter-Ethnic Relations (Macedonia), 73  
Council of Europe, 2, 26, 53, 59, 60, 62, 64, 74  
Cracow Document (1991), 37  
Crimea. *See* Ukraine case study  
CSCE (Conference on Security and Cooperation in Europe). *See* OSCE  
Cuban missile crisis, 9  
democracy, 19, 29, 35–36, 86, 88  
dimensions of security, 9, 12, 31  
Ekéus, Rolf, 67, 83  
Estonia case study, 4, 56–70, 86, 92  
EU (European Union)—OSCE involvement/case studies, 24, 51, 57, 60, 63–67, 69, 70, 74, 80, 82, 84, 91, 92  
European Convention on Human Rights, 66  
experts—use of/meetings of experts, 16, 17, 22, 26, 33, 49, 51, 79, 90  
Fenwick, Millicent, 14  
Final Recommendations of the Helsinki Consultations, 9  
Ford, Gerald, 11, 12, 14  
Foundation on Inter-Ethnic Relations (FIER), 23, 78  
Four Freedoms Awards (Roosevelt Foundation), 23  
Framework Convention for the Protection of National Minorities, 2, 26  
*Fulfilling Our Promises—The United States and the Helsinki Final Act*, 14  
Geoana, Mircea, 82  
Germany and the end of the Cold War, 18–19  
Gligorov, Kiro, 75  
Gorbachev, Mikhail, 17, 20  
Gostivar, 77  
Grachev, Pavel, 61  
Greece and Macedonia, 71–75  
*Hague Recommendations Regarding the Education Rights of National Minorities*, 26  
Helsinki Commission. *See* U.S. Commission on Security and Cooperation in Europe  
Helsinki Decalogue, 1, 12, 18, 27, 40, 42  
Helsinki Final Act (1975), 1, 7, 9–19, 22, 23, 27, 28, 30, 31, 34, 39, 40, 41, 42, 43, 48, 88  
Helsinki process, 1, 14–19, 29, 42, 43, 87, 89  
Helsinki Summit (1975), 10, 12  
Helsinki Summit (1992), 22, 25  
Helsinki Watch, 15  
High Commissioner on National Minorities (HCNM), 2, 1–7, 8, 21–26, 27, 46–55, 58–70, 73–85, 86, 90–93, *See also* Stoel, Max van der  
human dimension of security, 6, 18, 31, 87  
human rights. *See* individual rights/human rights  
Hungary and the end of the Cold War, 18–19  
IMF (International Monetary Fund), 72, 79  
Implementation Meeting on Human Dimension Issues (1997), 65  
individual rights/human rights, 1, 6, 7, 10, 11, 13, 14, 15, 19, 23, 24, 29, 34–36, 40, 42, 67, 87, 88  
Integration Foundation, 66  
International Helsinki Federation for Human Rights, 17, *See also* Helsinki Watch  
Kiev, 48, 50  
kinstate—definition, 6  
Kissinger, Henry, 10, 11  
KLA (Kosovo Liberation Army), 79, 80, 81  
Kosovo/Kosovar Albanians, 72, 79, 80, 81, 85, 92  
Kozyrev, Andrei, 50, 61, 62  
Kravchuk, Leonid, 48, 49

## Index

- Kuchma, Leonid, 49, 50, 52  
Lesok Monastery, 84  
*Lund Recommendations on the Effective Participation of National Minorities in Public Life*, 26  
Macedonia case study, 4, 24, 25, 71–85, 86, 92  
Madrid Document (1983), 17, 41  
Madrid follow-up meeting (1980–1983), 16  
Meeting of Experts on National Minorities (1991), 21, 43  
Meeting of Experts on the Progress on Human Rights (1985), 16, 17  
Meri, Lennart, 17, 60, 63  
Meshkov, Yuri, 48  
Minorities at Risk (MARS) project, 5  
Moscow Document (1990), 1, 3, 19, 22  
Narva, 57, 58, 60, 62, 69  
national minority—definition, 37  
NATO (North Atlantic Treaty Organization)—OSCE involvement/case studies, 8, 10, 23, 43, 57, 80–85, 92  
Nemeth, Miklos, 18  
Netherlands proposal regarding the HCNM position, 21, 22  
NLA (National Liberation Army), 80, 81, 82, 83, 85  
ODIHR (Office for Democratic Institutions and Human Rights), 1, 20, 22  
Office for Free Elections. *See* ODIHR  
Ohrid Framework Agreement, 82, 84, 85, 92  
OSCE (Organization for Security and Cooperation in Europe) background, 8–21, 93  
OSCE security concept, 45, 86, 89–90, 93, 94–101  
OSCE security principles, 1, 2, 3, 6, 44, 45, 27–45, 86, 94–101  
OSCE security principles—identification of, 27–45  
*Oslo Recommendations Regarding the Linguistic Rights of National Minorities*, 26  
Paris Summit (1990), 20  
Philip of Macedon, 71  
Powell, Colin, 81  
Primakov, Yevgeny, 64  
Reagan, Ronald, 11  
Robertson, Lord, 81, 82  
Roosevelt Foundation, 23  
Russia/Soviet Union—OSCE involvement/case studies, 1, 9, 10, 11, 14, 15, 16, 46–55, 56–70  
SEE University (South East European University), 80, 82, 85, 92  
Serbia/Serbs, 71, 72, 75, 79, 81, 85  
Sevastopol, 46, 47, 49, 50, 51, 52  
Shevardnadze, Eduard, 18  
Shultz, George, 16  
Sillamäe, 57, 60  
Solidarity (Poland), 15  
Solzhenitsyn, Aleksandr, 11  
Soros Foundation, 80  
Soviet Union. *See* Russia/Soviet Union—OSCE involvement/case studies  
Stoel, Max van der, 2, 5, 6, 22, 23, 25, 26, 46, 58, 83, 86, 90, *See also* High Commissioner on National Minorities (HCNM)  
Tallinn, 57, 58, 61, 64  
Tanusevci, 81  
Tetovo, 77, 80  
Tetovo University, 75, 76  
Trajkovski, Boris, 81  
Treaty on Conventional Armed Forces in Europe (CFE), 14, 18, 21  
U.S. Commission on Security and Cooperation in Europe (Helsinki Commission), 14, 26  
Ukraine case study, 4, 46–55, 86, 90–91  
UN (United Nations)—OSCE involvement, 47, 58, 59, 67, 71, 72, 73, 79  
UN Charter, 14, 39, 88  
United Nations Preventive Deployment Force (UNPREDEP), 71  
United States—OSCE involvement/case studies, 11, 12, 14, 80, 81, 82, 85  
Vienna Document (1989), 17  
Vienna follow-up meeting (1986–1989), 18  
Warsaw Pact/Warsaw Treaty Organization (WTO), 8, 10, 15, 17, 20  
Yeltsin, Boris, 50, 51, 52, 58, 59, 60, 61  
Yugoslavia, 25, 71, 93  
Zhirinovskiy, Vladimir, 60, 61, 63  
Zyuganov, Gennady, 62, 63

